The Rope

Notes of meetings with Gurdjieff

by

Kathryn Hulme and Solita Solano

1935 to 1937, 1939 & 1948

Introduction

Near the end of 1935 Gurdjieff was living in the Grand Hotel in Paris after having disbanded the last of his followers from the Prieuré group. He continued to work with some students and to receive visitors around his table at the Café de la Paix.

At that time a group of four women, who were variously associated with Gurdjieff, began to gather at this Café for whatever "morsels" of wisdom they could get. Soon Gurdjieff began to give them chapters of *Beelzebub's Tales* to read aloud to him so that he could study their reactions and understanding of the material he had written.

These four women : Solita Solano, Kathryn Hulme, Alice Rohrer and Louise Davidson - all friends – soon began working with Gurdjieff in a special group. They referred to themselves as The Rope - psychologically tied together on an inner world journey like mountain climbers tethered together for the safety of all. Elizabeth Gordon, an older British lady, attended almost all of their meetings. In time the group grew to include Jane Heap, Margaret Anderson, Georgette Leblanc, and others. The larger group was known as "Knachschmidt & Co".

Solita and Kathryn, both professional writers, took it upon themselves to take detailed notes of their meetings with Gurdjieff in order to share what they had learned with the other group members who could not be in attendance.

The notes in Section 3 by Solita Solano cover many of the same dates as those in Section 2 but with more detail and personal content.

Table of Contents

Section 1. Notes by Kathryn Hulme . . . 1

Section 2. Notes by Solita Solano . . . 77

Section 3. Further Notes by Solita Solano . . 169

Section 4. Notes of trips to America . . . 213

Section 1

Notes by Katherine Hulme

October 1935 through May 1937

The following group is called “Knachschmidt & Co.”

CANARY or KANARI	Solita Solano
SARDINE or SARDINE-WART	Louise Davidson
THIN ONE, THEENE ONE, SMALL ONE or OUR DARLING	Alice Rohrer
CROCODILE or KROK	Kathrine Hulme
YAKINA or YAK	Margaret Anderson
MISS GEEP	Jane Heap

Georgette Leblanc and Margret Anderson were not in Paris when group began. Monique Serrure (Georgette’s companion) came sometimes and was called Mere No. 6

NOTES were taken by Crocodile

October 1935

Saturday October 19, 1935.

See him first time. Crayfish and later, Montparnasse night.

Oct. 20, 1935.

Fontainebleau with him.

Mon, Oct 21, 1935.

Louise, Solita and self for crayfish again and his suggestion that we come to my room for reading.

Tues. Oct. 22, 1935. We meet him at 8 at Café de la Paix, to make plan for dinner. We have as much money among us as we can muster—150 francs but not enough, he goes to hotel to arrange something. While waiting for him I have "hunch" that he will be at the Greek Bistro. He comes out with a melon, and suggests we buy things and eat in my hotel. Solita tells me we have a good bistro, Greek, maybe he like. He hears he can have raki there. So, we go in taxi.

He seems to like the food. The previous day he had all upper teeth pulled and a new plate installed – and this Greek food is, he says, the first good eating he has had. He has long talk with the handsome foreigner Louise and I have often seen there, whom we called "The Sicilian". G speaks Greek with him and then Turkish. We leave and go to my room for another reading

Wed. Oct 23, 1935.

Solita, Louise and myself go to Fontainebleau with him - meet in Café where he is sorting three copies of chapter—one for each of us to read on train.

Fri. Oct 25, 1935.

Again, at Greek's—this time not so good, and he tells Solita he never come here again. Reading afterwards.

Sat. Oct 26, 1935.

No plan, no telephone call. Then Miss Gordon calls, tells us he is meeting in my room at 9:30. We go without him to the Greek's. In room waiting at 9:30. He doesn't appear. Ten, 10:30—we wait until 11—and then Solita and I decided to hunt him. Louise and Miss Gordon remain here in hotel. Solita and I go to Café de la Paix. We have coffee, then an Armagnac--he is not there--and when we ask the maitre d'hotel who knows him, learn he has not been there since eight and seldom comes in late at night. However, we wait. I have another hunch—that he will come. Around 12:30 hearts stop as we see him come in alone. He sits in corner. Does not see us at once. We wait—until he shall see us and signal if he wishes us. Suddenly he sees us—a most wonderful expression comes over his face and he raises his arms in greeting, gets up and comes to our table with coat, hat, brief-case.

He says he waited for us at crayfish place and telephoned twice from there. There had apparently been a ball-up in plans. Now however he is glad to

see us. He says is very tired. Teeth ache all day. Cannot eat. Now he orders a sugared tart with jam and a cup of bouillon. We sit while he eats. He explained he is very tired and must go now. And before leaving arranges to meet us Sunday at one at Coupole.

Sun, Oct. 27, 1935.

Meet G by arrangement at Coupole at one. Solita, Louise and I "You make plan", he said, "What we do? Place you know here, go?" I suggested Oasis which once he said he liked. He had plan. "We go gastronomic shop, buy hors d'oeuvres, go your place, eat" He went to the Russian shop next to Oasis, leaving us to finish coffee on terrasse. Came out after a while with two large bundles. We join him, take cab for hotel. Elaine joins us—now five around table. He has brought a great spread: caviar, salmon, meat cutlets, sausage from Latvia, animal feet in jelly (a favorite weekly dish at Prieuré, he says) black bread, white bread, cheese, olives, pickles, vodka and a bottle of white mustard and one of horse radish which he mixes together. We eat. We read afterwards--but we have stuffed our tapeworms and are sleepy. He is most sleepy. He leaves us around 3:30--we will meet him that night at Excelsior Brasserie for crayfish.

8:30 we four arrive for crayfish. He is already there. He tells us he has already four large Vieux Armagnac at Café de la Paix. He doesn't seem affected. But tonight, he is going to loose lightning, first time with us, at us. I got it first. The peppery soup around the crayfish—he says "Eat it, good for cold, take much bread in mouth, then sauce." I think he says breath and proceed to fill mouth with breath. He says bread—but still it sounds like breath and I take soup. (without bread). Then he roars—and I am unable to stop the flush. The crayfish pepper soup plus his raving at me for stupidity. And later I cannot stop the alibi: "I thought you said breath, not bread". By that time, he was gone away from my subject. Solita next—she asks a wrong question—he tells her her curse is curiosity.

Miss Gordon awaits us in hotel room. Solita and I go ahead in taxi--we are one hour late. We have among us drunk two whole bottles of Armagnac. Gurdjieff will follow with Louise and Elaine. G has learned new word at dinner. He tells me I am kind born 7 months not 9 - what is that? Premature, we say and he says I am Miss Premature. Later he asks me to tell Miss Gordon what is my new title. In the room he tells Miss Gordon she must drink brandy, because we all drunk—and her vibrations are cacophonous with ours—"for Garmony, you drink", and she does.

Tonight he has no book to read. He talks. He tells Solita she is a slave to functions—any function, he doesn't name it, but a function. Says "Tonight I make arise on you one flea—which bite, yes?" And that she has had those fleas always, sometime he make arise all her fleas, and all bite, and she never sleep again.

Now Miss Gordon, I tell you something, for you specially, you can understand. They can listen, for some other day they can remember this. But you will know now what I mean. "Emanations—everything has emanations. Earth, dog, that bottle, me, you—emanations are automatic—must go out automatically from every separate part, from all total part—go out automatically from every living thing. We each one surrounded by atmosphere of our emanations—some scientific apparatus can see these emanations. We each have atmosphere around us all the time—dog also, also bottle, also Earth. "Now then, think of your leg.

Emanations go out from leg also. Try now think. This is first step—this is first thing can do so that you die not like dog but can become part of God. Is it not good? When I tell you this beginning thing you can do, tonight your most big moment in life—more important for you than God—more important than your birth. Why? Because you born like dog. After tonight, you have responsibility, because I tell you this. Your leg—emanations go out—now you think: not all emanations go out of leg—you save some of them, you accumulate emanations in your leg—not let all go out—let some for necessary reason. But you accumulate some also, you begin to accumulate in you some of emanations which go out automatically. This is what I tell you. This is a beginning, to be not dog but part of God. After this, I tell you more. There are 7 ways to accumulate—this is first. To do this you must remember yourself. But you cannot do without asking me questions—think of questions—I give 12 hours—meet tomorrow morning, must ask 7 questions before can understand what I mean, otherwise I know you not understand.

Cow looks at new painted door

Three days ago we were at Fontainebleau with him—Solita, Louise and I—at lunch in his brothers's house. He turns on me and gives me a terrible test I cannot understand. I need no notes for also I cannot forget. Only this—to make the picture always complete—he says, "Me in room, ten men's guns pointed at me, a plate of merde on table—"Kees her or eat that".

I do self-observation while attack goes on, and stop flushes of tears, and keep my eye on him—eye to eye with him.

Afterwards, he, looking me in eye, laughs then turns to others, says: "See, she look at me like cow at new-pan-door." We all have to think what new-pan-door can mean. Finally realize he means "newly painted door. "Cow in morning, he says, goes out from barn—live always in same barn—go down same road to field—stay all day—eat. Man while cow gone paints door of barn. Night—cow come home—same road he knows, to same barn—but now barn has new paint door, cow stands, looking, looking, at new paint door. Not know her own home. That how she look on me now. You see?.

When he left last night we all stood around and thanked him. Our vibrations were high, it had been the biggest evening we had with him. Outside my door he turned to Miss Gordon and said: "Now Mees Gordon, you see? You small something here?" (as if he meant that among us there was a start of something which pleased him).

Mon Oct 27, 1935 (written the 28th).

Miss Gordon telephones at 7:30 to say "He will be there at 9:30". I do not know where all of us are, say so, promise to call her back at Café de la Paix in half hour. However Elaine, Solita and Louise are ready for evening—we gather together like gangsters in long coats saying, "He is coming, coming"—and from beds and café terrasses we gather, feeling almost too exhausted to stand. A quick Italian dinner to absorb cocktails. At 9:31 and 50 seconds, he comes coughing up the stairs. Miss Gordon is a few minutes late. We have coffee in room (lemon for him). Then we read chapter on League of Nations.

Late in evening he turns to Miss Gordon to ask if she have seven questions—a continuation of the emanations-accumulating talk of previous night. First he goes the rounds with us. Asks if we thought about this and what we say. What we say to each other, he insists. Each in turn must say what she said to the other. Principally, we had all tried to imagine seven questions, such as Miss Gordon would have to ask.

All we have done together is titillating, he says—still, he sees we had interest and decides to interview Gordon with us present. Miss Gordon then asks questions—tells him she tried the exercise—but thinks she had mind on it too much. "Where Mr. G, should center of gravity be for this—in mind?—in leg?—and explains to him how there came a stoppage when she tried.

G then says that stop come because you have too much mind on this—MUST have ATTENTION—what is ATTENTION: Attention is working together of association of thought with association of feeling. Memory working together with sense makes attention. But feeling has two centers—solar plexus

feeling (solar plexus brain) and spine brain. Must have attention—which means memory and sense working together on it. But must NOT philosophize—very dangerous philosophize. Be simple like monk, a monk given a task—you do with Faith—not try Knowing (with head) but SURE-ing (touches Solar plexus region)

Miss Gordon then asks about time—should one force oneself to do it for a long time, without stopping

G says: one third of waking state must be active—for active meditation, or active in sense that the real "I" functions. One third of waking time, be active; one third be actively relaxed; one third be automatic. Can do this exercise at any time—example: you go water-closet, know have 12 minutes there, this you give four minutes this exercise. Have three hours free, know for sure have three hours, then give one hour this exercise, etc.

Man have three worlds, he says: 1 - the outer world, world of impressions everything that happen outside of us; 2 - inner world, world of functioning of all our organs—the totality of organ functioning; and 3 - the Soul—that is, the world of Soul which was called by the ancients, the WORLD OF MAN. Three worlds have man—this exercise of leg is exercise also for inner world of man—mentation of inner world.

<u>The arising of the presence of man</u> - this to me is one of G's most wonderful phrasing. Once he talked about the arising of the presence of man—and said that just as physical presence arose, so can Soul world of man arise—and that between physical world (that is, the totality of physical presence of man) and the Soul world there was an intermediate world—the astral state.

Miss Gordon then asked if she should do the exercise when in life, or should do it sitting quietly alone.

G says, first, at beginning, do it when NOT in life—when lie in bed, sit in chair. Important not make mistake at beginning, not be occupied with outside life, etc. Important do it first outside of life then, when sure that doing is right, do it IN life. Can make mistake at beginning and that can be dangerous, then you have only psychopathic attention—mental centre attention—not totality of memory-sense attention. Later, must do in life. Must do ALL in life—not be like monks, isolated from life, monk all psychopathic. This must be full thing.

Later he says when you start accumulating emanation, you find that there is a place in you for them—like that place in automobile where power is accumulated. When you have many emanations accumulated, you find they

will crystallize—then you have force—not force that can go out of you like water, but emanations crystallized. Then you can do many things with.

And when do this, he says, it best have all muscles relaxed—"weak", he says—have all muscles weak. NO tension.

Miss Gordon says: "How can one know which is sense brain and which is feeling brain"

He says: "Can know that when when come to those stops—maybe you have no spinal brain working at this task—and you can know that by the absence of feeling in the spinal cord.

He says, again, memory working together with sense makes Attention. Important—sense have two meanings—in English haven't two words—but is something like Feeling and Sense—feeling in solar plexus region and sense in spinal cord.

After meeting ends, at 12:30, we go with him to Café de la Paix for coffee. After we order and start drinking coffee he says: "But tonight we not be parra-seet (parasite), maybe now we have now Armagnac because we not parraseet tonight. We have Vieux Armagnac. We start the toasts—à <u>la santé des idiots ordinaires</u>—then divide later for second and third toast—both Louise and Elaine not being able to drink whole of big glass of armagnac (having had chocolate first). Louise endeavors to give Solita and me more than the half out of her glass and G stops her. Says: "You have more need of this than they"—he taps his head, says: "You psychic weak, they have some, maybe only tail of donkey psyche but better than nothing what you have"—and makes her drink amount that he ordered for her. (Tail of donkey—something very low but nevertheless a little on the way—many things are NOT tail of donkey to him—such as good old armagnac, a good formulation, crayfish, etc.—people too.)

[KH away for November and December 1935]

January 1936

<u>Jan 22, 1936</u> (Solita Note)

Man had wish or desire but not possibility of doing what he wishes or desires. This is not his fault, for such he is made—even if he makes a promise and breaks it—not his fault. Either not his fault or we are all guilty.

For wishing and doing man is made in two separate parts, and such is the law concerning the operation of these parts that the more he may wish to do with one part of him the less he can do in this doing part even with constant struggle. For a young person Nature will help in the effort to do—so the person will not have to struggle as will a person of responsible age. After a certain age this effort is very difficult to make and often impossible, but there is an artificial aid by means of physico-chemico substances. By the way, a substance can be injected which will furnish artificial help for effort for prayer, or artificial help for effort in some other place. For everyone a different quantity necessary which must correspond with the amount of effort made by the individual. If the effort and the amount of this chemical are not balanced it becomes a dangerous poison for the organism.

Notes by Kathryn Hulme

FIRST TASK - JAN 24, 1936

We emanate all the time. This force flows out from us—task is, to keep from flowing out. At first, can only imagine you not let emanations flow out—but this imagination makes begin data for second body, and all this will pass over into the real thing later.

We must have within us Unchangeable Source. This holding-in of emanations will make energy for Unchangeable Source. Now, as average man, we must have many sources—instead of just one from which flows all active initiative. Unchangeable Source for which we work can be compared to the "I"—though hot same thing. Just as we have many "I's" which each day, each hour, take the initiative with us, so we have many sources which give many kinds of impetus—and so we have disharmony—we have not one strong central aim with one strong corresponding impetus—but many aims, many sources for impetus. Unchangeable Source important also for harmony.

Questions after 24 hrs trying to achieve withholding emanations. I say "Very, very difficult for me, cannot do even 40 seconds of this work without having associations start—and so must stop work in order to cope with associations.

G says: Can NEVER make stop associations; as long as you are breathing there are associations, these are automatic. Therefore, in this task, must not try to stop association—let them flow but not be active. With other part of mind work at new task, and this is active. Pretty soon you find you have beginnings of new kind of brain—a new one for this now kind of mentation—and that other one becomes entirely passive.

Solita asks: In this work, it is difficult for me to be aware of my body as a whole; it seems center of gravity for me always in solar plexis, and so I am more aware of emanation from that part of body.

G. says: Very important you know body as a whole for this work, very important. If divide attention, then not good. What you do is this: imagine centre of gravity on shoulders—theenk it there. He talks about sensing body as a WHOLE.

He leaves room: "Now you all titillate until I come back". When he returns he hears Alice saying: "And my eyes close when I do this exercise and I look inward. . ."

He tells about Inner Vision—something very important in this work. Alice has this faculty psychopathically—he tells her she must do it exact from opposite—"Do this only when you have conscious wish to do—as is, you do automatically". "Just do opposite way around". . . . and he tells Gordon she must begin make data for this kind of thing. How begin—look at an object, then suddenly shut eyes and go on seeing it, without any break. Any break in attention when shutting eyes means you must begin again. Must without break inattention when shutting eyes means you must begin again. Must without break in attention go on seeing inwardly exact details of what last saw . . . and all this makes for Inner Vision, which becomes power in time. "Was time, thirty years ago, when I could split that table with thought."

I geev toast not idiot toast—first time in long time I geev such toast: "Whom God (not your Jewish God but God you not know about) and Devil (Not devil you know about, but other devil)—whom God and Devil help, MAY HE RETURN WITH FEELING, ALL BODY DESERVING." (Start of "journey" toast).

And these small begin things that we do make data—and we on our part have taken a vow—NOT TO BE AVERAGE—not to be man in quotation marks—but be real man—ONE WHO CAN DO. . . and "THEN—CAN BE WHAT IS".

You like my formulation? Good formulation, don't you think? Look at Canary—a writer--but all her life cannot think phrase like that—and so is Crocodile writer—different kind. Canary she write with delicatesse; Crocodile, she write with axe."

Jan 25, 1936. Noon meeting, discussion first.

”What you find now”?

Alice says she finds within self, since begin emanations exercise,“ A great confusion”

”What confusion. What mean thees word? Maybe you mean it like Shame?’

”Yes, shame—that expresses better”

“Ah—thees very important theeng. She have shame—shame with mind for how is all of self. Now perhaps this shame will go in all centrum—and then she realizes how is?—she realize HER SIGNIFICANCE AS MAN. And what is—ees merde. Then she die—man must die to resurrect. But cannot die until realize nonentityness. So, I say that she have 25% possibility—is 25% along way to die, because she have shame—and if this shame proceed from mind to other centrum, then she will know what SHE is—how is HER significance. Know significance of self is extremely difficult; example, like try imagine one’s own death. Can imagine Mr. Smith being killed, but never self being killed. So it is with significance. Can know this about other person—but not about self.

I WISH RESULT OF THIS MY SUFFERING BE MY OWN, FOR BEING.

I tell G that in exercise I get mixed with my task about cigarette (not smoking for a week to see what new flow of associations results) andthat I seem for moment to learn more of self through cigarette abstinence.

G says : “This can be thing for power. I tell you one very important thing to say—each time when longing come. At first you say, and maybe notice nothing. Second time, maybe nothing. Third time, maybe notice something. Say “I wish that the force of my wishing be my own, for Being.” Then he thinks, says “No—better another way. Force such as this have special results—makes chemicals, have special emanations. Better say “I wish result of this my suffering to be my own, for Being Yes, can call that kind wishing suffering, because IS suffering.” “This saying can maybe take force from animal and give to Being . . . and can do this for many things—for any denial of something that is a slavery.” “I am colleague of life.” - G.

Jan 26, 1936. Last night dinner in G’s apt.

Solita, Jane Heap, Alice, Gordon, I—Gabo as always. He has made special boiled potatoes for Jane, also an egg dish—a kind of omelet with

asparagus stuffing (sugar on our portions, none on Jane's). One thing comes up towards end of dinner—G is asking how is tapeworm—and Jane says tapeworm lie down exhausted—and G says "No, you know what tapeworm do? He shakes head like thees (and he shakes his head slowly back and forth), and you know what happen? Vibration from head shakings go to stomach nerve, start stomach nerve vibrating—and then tapeworm, because stomach nerve vibrating, want food again." Later G turns to Alice and starts the story about the "lake in hell" where would sit in water-closet liquid, up to chin level, crying "Come in slowly, oh please come slowly" to each new soul coming into lake who might stir up ripples on surface (which comes to lip level of those condemned to sit in it).

Today, Sunday, I go to Café de la Paix to see if there are plans. Find him sitting alone. Invited to sit at table. He tells me the Ford car deal is off—money arrangements are too complicated—and thees too bad "because it was car which correspond very good for me." Then he asks how Jane survived his food, what we talk about afterward, "how titillate"— and his word "titillate"brings back what he said last night, how he likes this word, how it can it can be used always censorly in his book, but no one realize this mean "masturbate".

And words—philology—another association flows. Last night at dinner with Jane; etc.—how he tells about phrase he special like: "Tail of donkey"—and how in *Third Series* (of his book) he wrote much about this phrase which have no equivalent in French—many pages he write about this—how he cannot say queue de l'âne in French because it mean something dirty—"And this phrase for me very lovely".

"Very perhaps" is his phrase that Jane likes.

"First-able" is Gordon's special favorite.

Today at lunch he spends a full quarter hour trying to find from Gabo exact meaning of a Russian word he has used talking with Gordon. He has told her she is _____ because she sneak up and steal from his store of food . . . and he works and works with us all to get exact meaning, finally gets his dictionary—but it is "old Russian word" and not found in his Russian dictionary, though he does find a root that means "Infamous wretch"—and he says: "Does that mean small-false? This word I use, old Russian, mean small-false—mean make false in small way;—all I can think of in English is dirty-dog-ness—that perhaps exact meaning in English. In Russian is a big word, only old Russian.

Today at lunch we ate "21st salad in Third series"—the "visa on your passport for journey" he said. I could identify tomatoes, parsley, leek, onion, horse-radish and preiselberry sauce, some curry, etc. "Only two theeng not spoil by age--Armagnac and Carpets".

Today: we read "Arch-Absurd" and part of "Arch-Preposterous". G explained about Okidanoch—the common-cosmic-active-Element—and at table tells us that his cabbage soup very important for Okidanoch, for Active Element, more important than all rest of the meal. So, K "keep company" with him for a second bowl.

February 1936

Sun Feb 2, 1936.

First ride in G's new car—Paris to Rouen in nothing flat. Speedometer at 110 per hour nearly all the way—once I constated a speed of 120 and G himself promised 135 after he had the car a week. Every possible kind if moto-accident death passed us by— I had to decide categorically to non-identify with all I knew and felt about cars—otherwise I would have been wrecked. Alice says she did emanation-holding exercise en route.

Once G stopped for a view over a wide valley beyond Orgeval, where Normandy begins—and said "It gives feeling of WIDE"—and that was exactly what happened to one when one looked.

Lunch in the farmhouse at Pont de l'Arche—his two friends, "Papavitchka and the Doctor—and such charm and goodness and reality in these people, we felt odd and strange, painfully unaccustomed. I told G that they made me want to cry "because forget was this kind of real people on earth."

Left Paris at 11:30 and were back at 7:15—Rouen and return in something like 5 hrs, for we had about 3 hours out for coffee, shopping in St. Germain market, shopping and coffee-ing again in Rouen, and lunch at the farm.

In Café de la Paix G started talking about Roses, roses—how he felt, how next week would be Thorns, thorns—when the 14,000 Francs came due on car. But Thorns, thorns in Outer World were good, because then were Roses, roses in Inner World. Is law: for one dissatisfaction, always a satisfaction. Then he asked: which I think—would he rather have Roses, roses

in his Inner or in his Outer World. Then when I answered, he decided that was too complicated a question. He said "Better I tell you one thing. This makes you rich for life. richer than your Mr. Rockefeller. There are TWO struggles—inner world struggle and outer world struggle—but never can these two make contact, to make data for Third World; not even God can give this possibility for contact between Outer World struggle and Inner World struggle, not even your heredity. Only ONE thing—must make INTENTIONAL CONTACT between Outer World struggle and Inner World struggle—then can make data which crystallize for Third world of man, sometimes called World of Soul, etc. Understand?" he asked.

We said: "Not quite—but get taste."

I said: "One things cannot think about—cannot think about this INTENTIONAL CONTACT.

G shook head, said: "Ah, that too far ahead for you yet".

But later said: "I can geev small example which maybe give you TASTE of this INTENTIONAL CONTACT. You for example, your cigarettes. You have Outer World struggle-not to take, not buy, remember always break habit—and also you have Inner World struggle about same thing. With Inner World you can imagine how it was when you smoke—imagine in a different way—more keen, and with more longing—and it seem even, with this Inner World imagining, even more desirable than it ever could be. You have made this cigarette Intentional Contact between the two struggles—and even by this small thing you will make data for Third World—for World of Soul as sometimes said. This not exact example—I have chapter on International Contact, in Third Series—but this enough to give you taste of what is."

May 1936

May 1, 1936.

"I can have relation with one atom of active element as with friend, as with man—can command, make do—so now for me is interesting how you are. I make picture."

He wants exact description of each small symptom observed. "I make go here, there, like soldiers . . . then when nothing left to do begin something else. When two opposite soldiers stand same place nothing is left to do, they

begin to eat each other. This is a law of mechanical life. Soon in you I make civil war.

THE OUTER AND THE INNER WORLD OF MAN:

Man has two worlds—Outer, all impressions seen and felt; Inner, automatic functioning of all organs. Man can have third world, which ancients called the "World of Man". Intentional contact must be established between first and second world—then can begin third world.

ATTENTION depends on the "degree of the gradation of the state of being"—the ancients spoke of STRENGTH OF EMBRACE of Attention.

Definition of attention according to ancient science:

THE DEGREE OF BLENDING FOR SAMENESS BETWEEN THE IMPULSES OF OBSERVATION AND CONSTATION BY THE PROCESSES OF ONE TOTALITY WITH THE PROCESSES IN OTHER TOTALITIES.

VIBRATIONS—the blending of vibration. The spectrum-painting. Each one of man's three brains has its separate radiations.

"When you do a thing, do with whole self. ONE THING AT A TIME. Now I sit here and I eat. For me nothing exists in world except this food, this table. I eat with whole attention. So you must do everything. When you write letter, do not at same time think what cost laundering of that shirt; when you compute laundering cost do not think about letter you must write. Everything has its time. To be ABLE to do ONE THING AT A TIME—this is property of Man, not man in quotation marks."

"You ask about sleep, you have impulse for sleep with new medicine. Is best not to try fight wish for sleep. NATURE KNOWS MORE THAN 100 DOCTORS. Is all right if you sleep—not half sleep, half dream. Sleep with whole self—one thing at a time. Maybe you wish sleep because some accumulator (battery) in you is run out—some special place—have no energy. This can be accumulated in you only when in absolute passive state—in sleep. So you wish sleep."

May 5, 1936.

He comes in from Rouen, phones from Café at 7:30: "Come at 8:30. When we arrive he has a big dinner already. Since there was no food in the house, therefore for this dinner "all new, begin from new"—in one hour he has

bought and prepared: hors d'oeuvres, baked dish, pasta and meat, saffron potatoes, baked baby lamp, soup, a thin pudding dessert (best ever tasted). "Ekh Ekh . . . so tired. . . last night Rouen not sleep, trains pass . . . today long drive. But in one way is good thing to be so tired. Can feel now what nonentity is body, can look through it and see is merde, can look and find in middle a pearl—the small earned active part—your I. This gives a happy feeling, is good part of being so tired, to look through and find this pearl—your earned part."

G. tells of a prayer which is recited in Orthodox Christian Church, from Easter until Ascension Day—"UNTIL TIME WHEN HE FLY". Impossible to translate—he gives exact:

ESSENCE THROUGH IMAGINATION

NATURE PRESENTS LIFE

THIS IS TRUTH OF OLD TRUTHNESS

(I have only remembered 3 lines of it.)

May 6, 1936

He gives each of us a bottle of scent—an objective scent which he has composed, makes light all sorrow of Inner World. He speaks about gladness. "Is two kinds—gladness with reason, gladness without reason. Science explains gladness without reason (only kind we know) psychologically, but is not so. Is chemical thing. Something happen, associations start, change organic functionings, all an automatic flowing, cause results—result is gladness. Feeling of gladness is not anything over which we have any control. Is mathematical sequence done in us.

May 7, 1936.

G expresses a wish for us—Gordon, Solita and me—with such quiet depth a feeling that I wish to weep, hearing him. He is talking about his favorite word, "a good word", and how he has said it again and again to us—merde, mornde AND merde: "I wish you be not like merde, so first I make you feel like merde, only from there one can begin. Average, normal man have factors, you have none. Americans and English especially, I give exercises—to crystallize for factors. Psyche man is built up on factors. So to have psyche must have factors. Americans have none, are like Burro. With my inner world I see a Burro. English like sheep, I see a sheep, and French—donkey. For each, with my inner world I have different relation. Sheep, Burro, Donkey is

different thing. But I not let them see is different thing. My inner world is my world."

Is property of man that he never can do what he planned a week ago, an hour ago

At table he talks, in the mood of being half way along our journey. He pictures to us how it will be, our suffering and discomfort. To Miss Gordon" "Remember about chair? Leave one—not yet arrive at next? I pity you. I picture what suffering you will have. I cannot lift you to next chair. I can show way to go, to right or to left. Oh, to others you will seem to sit, but how you sit only your inner self will know. And what suffering your inner self. I picture to myself how will be for you. I feel sorry."

May 24, 1936.

How you like soup, Sardine?

I think it is very good.

Think.. theenk.... we not use that word. "I think" is property of onanist. All life is a stage and a man is one of two things—is meat, (for manure, etc.) or is actor. To learn role is intelligence, to be able to play role is what intelligence means. (This he says to me when I forgot to rise and toast Gordon as 'your reverence'). You see, what I tell you to do is only joke thing, but it is role I give you to play. If you forget for joke thing, how can remember for real thing? You see I wish you not be meat.

AN EXTRAORDINARY MAN IS HE WHO IS RESOURCEFUL IN LIFE, WHO IS RESTRAINED IN HIS MANIFESTATIONS THAT COME FROM HIS NATURE AND WHO IS INDULGENT TOWARD THE WEAKNESS OF HIS FELLOW MAN.

We have all eaten watermelon until we burst. Still three pieces remain on plates. G urges we eat but all refuse.

G: You know what called such pieces? Everywhere in world is called SHAME PIECES—because everyone wish take and he have shame and not take—and always is best pieces.

A little later he says: Is another expression, even better than this: I WISH FROM ALL MY NEIGHBORS SHAMING PIECES HAVE EVERYDAY.

He speaks of how well we fare at his table—IF BUST, THEN MUST WITH MUSIC. And he continues: Though not have pay for coffee in Café de la Paix, I always have for table. And moreover have for table things not even your Rockefeller can buy. In Café I make manipulation, but always HAVE FOR TABLE. THIS VERY CHARACTERISTIC, ORIGINAL AND STRANGE.

He urges one more piece of melon on Margaret and says: Eat—prove that in Yev-ropp knew you have a cousin.

I remember that cow, Mr G.

Coffee in salon. He says to Sardine: drink, drink—make use of accident.

I laugh.. nervously

G: Why you laugh. Because is not accident.

I say emphatically. Is <u>not</u> accident.

G: IS.

He plays a divine music we have never had before. Afterwards he says: Is Greek music. When gods of Mount Olympus drink "doosiko" and eat small salted fish, such music they have—three choruses.

I say, (fresh from Pogassian reading): Maybe this what Pogassian heard when drink Doosiko with English sailors

G: POGOSSIAN WAS SMALL FOR THIS KIND OF THING.

He continues talking about gods and Olympus. Original mountain where live gods not in Greece—is in Turkey—where is Green temple. (I remind him of the green mosque at Broussa). Yes, just near Broussa is mountain—is SMALL CONVENIENT MOUNTAIN, EASY TO GET UP, WHICH PROVE GREEK GOD WAS NOT IDIOT. Olympus could not go—very high. Is also another mountain very difficult Mount Ararat—this stand alone, only one little mountain to North—then nothing for hundreds kilometers. Only very few times can man breathe from top. Is like Everest where your English spend much money for climbing and never man set foot on top. But maybe Russians now—they try with such things for going down in sea (diving apparatus), maybe they succeed. We see.

Before lunch in the Café—where Alice and I go for instructions. We find him in the toils of a terrible situation and he tells us how many small things go together and make suddenly one Beeg thing which can now be disaster—and how he struggles and manipulates. He goes out for a moment to

the pharmacy and when he returns he says: NEW LAW I JUST NOW DISCOVER**WHERE STRUGGLE IS, THERE FLIES GIVE BIRTH TO ELEPHANTS. I HAD AROUND ME FLIES—NOW I HAVE BUSINESS WITH ELEPHANTS.

July 1936

July 25, 1936. Cafe de la Paix.

Alice and I with him at table. He asks me in a casual tone how is with me. I tell how the past day or two I have been unable to do my work...even though it is only the familiar and simple exercise; how I wake up mornings, trying to get necessary concentration to do. This has been going on for two days. I wondered if nature's laziness was getting the better of me—And I was ashamed to tell him. "If would have to describe inner-world state, Mr G, would last 2 days—would say chaos".

Expression on face as if pleased. Then: What you tell is what I interest to hear. Now I can tell you one thing. You remember long ago I say first would crystallize factors for phantasia—all your factors from past life; then would begin crystalize new ones. Now you see, all you have done was phantasia. Results you imagine from exercise were all self suggested, and when you tell how you concentrate I smile inside and say 'Let be'. Now you can see how terrible thing is self suggesting—is most dangerous thing for man. Is so great it make red see white (you look at red and you see white) white see black, church see divan. What you have now, this is the thing I tell about—now you begin—now can see maybe the merde, the nothingness you are. Your inner state now—you have room and all furniture are out of it, it is empty, not yet new ones put in. How you see yourself now is without effect of Kundabuffer. One side is terrible thing for you, but from another side you can have cause for objective gladness because you are in such state now.

I: And all these months of inner work!

G: Is not so easy, what we wish do.

At lunch he has a new casserole of baked meat and tells us it is not horse meat. From this joke he turns serious

G: Here I know many people who eat horse meat. I know what kind of people eat.. they have centime-ness. All my life, I have prayed we would not have to eat horsemeat. Such people they are, understand centimes. If you tell you pay one franc or 10 francs for such and such, this mean nothing; but if you tell you pay 80 centimes, already this begin be for him big thing. There is one

word in Russia, very correspondent—is word for such measure, (shows about a yard measure on the table), and this is divide in 60 versts—and each verst into four parts. Just the name of one of these four parts is word for expressing this centimeness. In Russia you have only to say this one word about a man, and is as if you wrote a whole book about him—THIS ALREADY GIVE VALUUM SMALLNESS.

From horsemeat and centimeness we get around (I forget exactly how) to the fifty-fifty horse and chicken sausage business, and G says he has plan for even better business..instead of using chicken will use a sparrow. Could use a canary, but canary expensive because sometimes sing a little. One horse, one sparrow—good business. But even better—Could use horse and one VENERIAL LOUSE. With such combination as this would make most money of all.

How did talk of Jews originate? At his table he is saying: ALREADY HALF THE WORLD IS CHRISTIAN, YET THEY STEAL OLD JEWISH GOD. LIKE THE GERMANS ALL PEOPLE BEGIN NOW HATE THE JEWS**YET CARRY OLD JEWISH GOD IN HEART.

July 26, 1936.

My toast: Your whole future depend from this: that she come back manifesting outwardly that is satisfied you are good for her little sister.

And Alice's: May God give you in life one more Sunday like this.

Read Ekkim Bey the boyhood friend who pursued the same aim, and this gave rise to an inner-world intimacy—as if they were "arising of a homogeneous causality" the feeling of brotherly love. I remember this phrase at table—when he is telling Solita that always she will have such feeling for Alice, whether hate or love her; nothing in her family life can equal, because they have pursued common aim together—and also 'from same barrel.' I give the homogeneous causality phrase (just read and luckily remembered, and he says: Svolich, what memory she have! (but he is pleased).

I am particularly struck by Ekim Bey's experiments with the human psyche—through his great knowledge of what he terms the "strength of thought." The tension of the muscles strains in the direction of the thought. An object in room is named, the "magician" holds the hand of one who knows and by slight, almost imperceptible tremors, finds the object. Even if the "subject" know about this small shock to muscles, this twitch, and takes measures to prevent it, he cannot, because the impulse comes from the subconscious. Ekim

Bey's experiment, moving the subject's hand over the alphabet laid out in squares and so spelling out the subject's name—the slight tension of the muscles in the hand when it passes over the right letter. Anyone can learn to do this, with a little practice.

The Persian dervish—and his counsels against yogi exercises—one functioning determining the tempo of another, and if one is changed then all must be changed—and who knows enough about his body to do this?

July 28, 1936.

While we are reading about his experience in the artillery-field, with Karpenko, he is roaring in his bedroom, in Russian—rage to split the walls. Then he comes in with us, asks if we noticed what he said—and we say we heard the voice but not the words.

G: You notice was scandal-voice. Man is such swallach. First time you give to him; fifth time he sues you for not giving enough. All ordinary man is such. I am old man now, never in all life I find ordinary man who is not such. (And about the friend he was raving at): With inside I feel sorry, but must make exterior so.

He warns us we must remember this trait of ordinary man, and tells us the explanation of it will be preface for something important he will explain to us. At table he tells us the beans in soup will have for us property of castor-oil, and presently Canary is asking him if castor-oil bean grows in Egypt.

G: Everywhere it grows. Not only Egypt but everywhere. Even in your South -America – near Buenos Aires he knows about a Russian who grows castor-oil beans now and is making big business of.

Canary: Is it true, Mr G, that can make a poison from castor- oil bean?

G: Yes, of course. Can make poison from all things. Even from you can make a poison. I tell practically how: first boil for a while, then marinate—from such process can make poison from you.

Canary: In that way, saying "everything", you spoil answer.

A little later he laughs to himself, then to Canary: Look, even they all take habit expecting you will be put in galoshes. Even they know with such question where you will go. Only difference each time is how you go—this time go head first, next time feet first—but always you go. There is saying for such property you have: CONCERNING PRAYING, SHE WITH

CONFERENCE IN WATER-CLOSET WILL BEGIN: CONCERNING MERDE, SHE WITH CONFERENCE AT TABLE WILL BEGIN.

Later: He is asking who will be his secretary when Gordon is away—and asks Canary if she goes on vacation. When learns she can be his secretary he says to rest of us: See how convenient. Now you all can send to Canary what checks you wish send for me.

Canary: And hope send check for secretary too.

G: Now you spoil all. You not wait for data be fixed. Only after one data be fixed, then you can speak of another. Now again Canary is in galoshes.

G: But one side is good—she make pratique. Is good have pratique—then go in and come out easy—never stay long in, never long out. Now when Yakina will go in galoshes she will stay forever.

Canary: She never ask question here, Mr G, but at home is mouse-valiant.

Yakina: I wish take risk, Mr G, I wish ask question.

G gives permission.

Yakina: We wish know what is the interior animal of Crocodile.

G: Is baby. Interior is baby. Naive.

Someone says I have now a colleague in Jane Heap.

G: No, is not same thing. Miss Geep have baby much older. Crocodile two and one-half year. For her being baby inside I not blame entirely partly I blame our Dariling; and for this I make so (he makes the prod-goad gestures). Then he tells us how our Darling always wish be mother and this very strong in her. He says there is a saying: IF CALL SELF MUSHROOM THEN IN MUSHROOM BASKET MUST GO. We mention the pepper in potatoes.

G (answering Yakina's question as to whether pepper is good for one, etc.) Twice month is necessary eat in pepper for disinfecting. Your doctor say not eat—but each year I eat in pepper weight of one of your doctors. But not this black pepper which England now make grow everywhere and which is not real pepper—I eat the red pepper. This goes not in the blood—it goes all through the mucous-membrane linings—and tomorrow morning, if put attention, will notice how it burn. (Alice mentions red pepper among our Indians.) Yes, just this one place is the REAL pepper eaten—always your red Americans, the real Americans, have this partique. And I tell you one thing you have never notice there—when Indian come down from mountain with load of

pepper he grow, he sell his pepper and when he go back up mountain HE CARRY STONE. NEVER HE WISH GO BACK EASY. Such thing you not notice, but I see. Next time, you look.

Later—again galoshes—G is warning Canary:

Will come one day when Yakina go in galoshes and if you there already she go on top of you and push so deep never you can get out—can you picture? Canary under yak—will be pushed down into deep place where is worst stink.

July 29, 1936. Lunch.

Before lunch we talk we talk about frogs—the subject arising from his naming of a certain dish (his sturgeon and shopped-egg baked dish which sound like "gorjunksakhr")(reminding him of Gordon!) and which in reality means sardine-wart. Then we talk about frogs and warts, and he tells how certain toads, from a liquid coming from their mouths, make on the hand that touches them hundred of warts—but just on the hand. Certain other frogs make this same juice from the pores. He is interested to learn that even in America we have this understanding about the arising of warts—that as children we were warned not to touch frogs.

G: Everywhere in world is such understanding. Then he tells how he has eaten EVERYTHING, but frog he HATE—never can swallow such thing. Is perhaps only thing he hates. Sea fish—anything that comes from sea—has for him a STINK—but now he eat a few sea fish sometimes. But frog-meat, never. Eel also he never touches—in his family they sometimes ate it, all except his father who would never touch. We speak of the many kinds of frogs and he says he knows hundreds—"also one kind in tree sing like bird". One important thing comes from frog—nobody knows about—which can cure a "four-year illness" in 24 hours.

Our dessert, melo, has—as he expresses it – "all kitchen garden in it" and he asks Miss Gordon to explain what he means. Miss G talks about the virtues of all kitchen-garden vegetables and perfumes of all the flowers—and here he stops her.

G: Not flowers. Kitchen garden is useful thing, never I have flowers growing in kitchen garden. Flower is dirty thing—is poison of the earth—is masturbator thing. You know why created?—FOR HELP KUNDABUFFER. In old science flower evil reputation have. One flower not exist which grows law-able. Flower is Black Magic material.

Canary: (aside to Margaret) Here go our flowers.

G. overhears and wants all. Canary explains that she had an instinct that soon we would have to say goodbye to flowers.

G: You see, sometimes have good instinct.

Alice: Even roses, Mr.G? The essence of roses for rubbing (such as he gave her once)—and in the Bible they speak often of roses.

G: Roses, yes, roses for certain things can have good—but must be in combination. ROSES IN BIBLE WERE ALWAYS MENTION WITH THORNS. There is an old saying: "YOU CAN ONLY UNDERSTAND AND LOVE ME WHEN YOU LOVE—THEN YOU HAVE PASSION FOR—MY THORNS. THEN, ONLY THEN I AM YOUR SLAVE." In old poetry—not what you know as poetry, but religious poetry—there is a very beautiful song —difficult translate for you—but very correspondent with what we now speak about. This is a song that the nightingale sing to the rose: "Even though I hate your merde I must love you, I must sing to you."

July 30, 1936. Lunch.

The day of destiny-aim for original Knachschmidt.

Canary's toast is still "Compassionate—meanwhile" and G says: Look, she have oily face and wish I fill glass. (We explain she waits for new idiot). He says: That is something else—first is the glass she wishes filled. Canary refuses the second glass. He urges—he says it will relieve his aching left corn if she will drink. She refuses. He then takes her right hand in his and says: And next time I wish you be able drink like ordinary man, not be slave for drink, not must refuse but, wish or not wish, drink as those around you drink; but you must drink as if you not like to drink.

When he makes a 1st attempt to tempt Canary and is categorically refused, catches a smile on Margaret's face and turns to her saying: You spoil with smile what just now Canary make for me. In truth you have not data to be friend for anyone. I would not choose you for friend. He asks us to verify, but none of us had seen the smile. Was it an indulgent smile for what was real-beyond-indulgence for Canary? His next remark—about so-and-so-is wife-for you makes me think it must have been an indulgent or a proud smile—when No smile whatsoever belonged in that moment—a moment before, a moment later, would not have been so bad, but at exact moment you smile—and not even need make ha-ha-ha.

Later we're talking about manure.

Canary: Once you tell I can be manure even for lettuce.

G: Not even for lettuce. Even is very important word. Then about Yakina. And she, you know what kind manure she make? For betterave. You know betterave? big, round, too much have.

Yakina: Too much sugar.

G: Too much there is of everything. By the way is sugar. Miss Gordon reminds he once said she makes manure for flowers, and Canary tells then how all Knachshmidt ponder on flowers: "worms gnaw" and that Miss Gordon asked as result, "What about the poppy which is a polormedokhtic?" (He got out of this trap so fast I don't even remember which way he went, but there was no elucidation of this for us.)

Alice's toast: May God give you strength to understand what I just now tell (our destiny-aim), and may you well-go and well-come.

With our spiced potatoes and baked meat he tells how for certain ones at table there will be very bad results—those who will not for a long while be able to eat such food, and who will remember it, with pain. To Alice: I hope only in memory will you suffer for my food—but that with all other parts of you, you will wish for all the other eating at my table; let the food you eat here stay in memory, only, but the other kinds of food carry with you.

Square Idiot Toast—I say "And mine also"

G: Not often we drink Crocodile's health; every day we drink Miss Gordon's so often we do it automatically—but square is far along and when we drink we put attention on it. Though she not have it every day, when she have she have quality wishing…Let God help, Devil take—or Devil help, God take.

We come to Round Idiot - Yakina says perhaps she can be candidate for Round.

G: Candidate? How be candidate? Maybe already for a long time you have been Round (long pause to digest this surprise!) but you are not Round. You are the Idiot after zigzag—further along than Round. Idiot de Naissance.

Alice asks him what is her interior animal. She says she knows boa is outside animal, but wishes now know interior.

G: How you know such is your animal?

Crocodile explains: Because once, Mr. G you told us how she was looking at you like full boa constrictor, wishing very much to swallow you also, but unable to.

G: ignoring the main question which Alice puts remarks how easy it was for him to put serpent in her—because already she has by heredity—a capacity for great swallowing and for him it was only half-work to implant the idea. G: And oh what suffering she now will have—because I have put serpent in her and she will always swallow—and sometimes there will not be anything to swallow—and because she also have this capacity for swallowing from her heredity, so will she doubly suffer. Was easy for me; was already half there when I put.

July 31, 1936.

We read again Introduction to Second Series and new understandings arise in us. How great and unforgettable phrases like "the thought that produced my deep thoughtfulness"; and "wiseacring for the swing of thought"; and "tricky solution of a crafty problem". The crafty problem is the old saying of ancient people which he uses as a link between last chapter of First Series and first chapter of Second Series, and the sense of the saying is this: ONLY HE IS WORTHY TO BE CALLED MAN AND TO RECEIVE SOME OF THAT WHICH IS PREPARED FOR HIM FROM ABOVE, WHO ACQUIRES DATA FOR PRESERVING INTACT THE WOLF AND THE SHEEP CONFIDED TO HIS CARE.

By wolf is understood the totality of the automatic and reflex functionings of the body. By sheep is understood the totality of the feelings. And the man in this case is understood to be the totality of the mentation—the Reason which directs, guards and guides.

The people of Asia who are famous for finding a "tricky solution of a crafty problem" have made this into a riddle: A man has a wolf, a goat and a cabbage—and a boat in which to take these mutually — hostile — and — alien arisings across a river. The riddle is how he can do this. The answer is that he must not be lazy, but must on the contrary be willing to make more than one crossing; and not, on the other hand, make one more crossing than necessary. IN EVERY MAN THERE MUST BE THE CONSTANT STRIVING THAT THE WOLF BE FULL AND THE SHEEP INTACT.

July 31, 1936. (continued).

Goaded by the others and by my own curiosity as well, I asked him for the only "portrait" we have not read—"Prince Nijeradze"—mentioned in the "Ekim Bey" chapter as one of the portraits in this series.

At table he tells the others: Do you know what she asked me? She asked for chapter Nijeradze and she not even have checkbook, not even possibility for checkbook.(To me)You know—for reading this chapter necessary many zeros. You are too young, too poor. This is a big thing—for translation of this chapter alone I spend more money than for all others together—so important it is, I wish it to be exact. Already it is trans-lated in 28 languages—each translation I verify word by word. If you wish know, there is even copy on your continent America, one in Persia and one in Germany. None in your England, Miss Gordon —and so far none in France. Maybe will be in French, since I remain here—will see, later." And for such thing she ask and she cannot even write begin check."

He tells how Monday will be sad day for Nicolai—he will go to a certain (Russian) for teaching—a teaching in mechanics—but such kind of teaching as is known nowhere else on earth. He tells Miss Gordon about the teacher (whom she apparently knows). One atom of this boy worth the whole of ten men of any of your English or Americans—such mentation he have—never I see such on earth. Greater he is than your King—your king never could be such as he is—and he could never be king of such small thing as England. When he will be king, will be in objective sense. I have prepared. When I die—you will not know about him at first. FOR TWO YEARS AFTER MY DEATH EVERYWHERE ON EARTH WILL BE SUBJECTIVE REVOLUTION.

(To Margaret): Now you say you hate yourself, you love yourself—but only with outside; after—you will say with inside. Such thing will happen when I die. All man must die, early, late, and moreover man how have special time, cannot live beyond. I also. . . And in subjective revolution he will not take part—he will only take part in governor's revolution, afterwards.

He refills our Armagnac glasses, talking all the while with the Russian man who is at the table. And after refilling he looks at the level in each glass (exact) and says: YOU NOTICE HOW EVEN MY 'JUST' IS PART OF MY AUTOMATISM?

Solita: And you not even look, MrG.

G: Of course, not even look.

Turns to Margaret and asks if she understood what he said.

M: I understood perfectly, Mr.G.

G: I am glad. Sometimes even Englishman forget their English when I speak.

When the soup comes—a super-borsch—he says to Alice: I will tell you one thing - - - ? - - pause, if you will work how I tell yesterday, if you will not be lazy, idle, you can have such soup every day for the rest of your life—and everything correspondent with it. There is more than one kind of food at my table.

An aside to Solita, clarifying a difficulty in her mentation which he has perceived. STICK TO BE STICK MUST HAVE TWO ENDS—TO BE PART OF STICK IS NOTHING –THERE ARE MILLION MILLION ATOMS IN A STICK. Fly must be—no, not elephant, but tiger. Such cunning he must have.

After the melon is served he notices three sprigs of estragon beside Louise's plate —asks Canary to hand them to him. We all think he wishes to eat greens. He holds up the estragon and tells us such an amount of fresh green costs five francs and she (Louise) defiles. "Such is the lack of education of American people. Literally with my last cent I buy such thing, and you defile.You merde on my labor, can you understand this? In your home you can leave what not can eat—but when you are guest among people with different taste, different understanding, different checkbook, you must take ONLY WHAT YOU CAN DESTROY. You must KNOW for you how much this is and only so much take.

Louise: I tried to put back on plate, Mr G, but Valya took it way too fast.

G: In this case Valya is servant—he not supposed to have to think about such thing—this is not his work, it is for you to know and take only what you can destroy. Such is understanding among all educate people.You must know about this.

He has been telling Miss Gordon something presumably unwelcome and she looks at him steadily.

G: You know how Mees Gordon look on me? This very complicate explanation. First must tell how in old Armenian there are three words for merde, liquid, medium and hard—if you know what mean, you know. And now I tell: Mees Gordon look on me like liquid merde look on castor oil.

Later—in salon after music – he lets Alice know that he notices she is sitting on and on while a hundred small last-minute tasks wait to be done, and this is how he says it: Look at Theen One, how she sit. Last days here she wish do many things and she is thinking of all the cinemas and music-halls she must see so she can tell at home how is in Paris—she wish satisfaction of being able to tell what goes on in theatre, in opera, in cinema and music hall—but at same time she knows here she is in centrum where is quintessence, and she know ONLY FROM QUINTESSENCE CAN THERE BE SOMETHING FOR THE

FUTURE. Also, she think about hat. And by the way, Mees, that hat you wear with veil—make arise in me such feeling of deuil that no matter what was color, I see black.You know long ago I was in modes—I make suggestion for the new mode, was specialist. I know about such thing. Never such hat as that one will be worn, here in Europe or in your America. Man will buy—but second day will beat self for having bought such hat.

August 1936

August 1, 1936, In the Café.

Alice and I are having one of our "last conferences." We tell him we feel "strange"—we have just come from Margaret's porto party for us—and could not talk of anything but him and the work, and that all else seemed foolish and light.

G: Yes, it is so. You will feel strange. As you are now, you are out of one chair and you have not yet the DATA FOR SITTING IN THE NEXT CHAIR. ALL THAT YOU WILL DO WILL SEEM LIKE A POURING FROM THE EMPTY INTO THE VOID—ALL MEETINGS WITH PEOPLE etc. LATER WHEN YOU HAVE THE DATA YOU WILL GO BACK AND DO THIS SAME THING, AND IT WILL MEAN SOMETHING TO YOU.

He sees our several hat boxes.

I say: Monkey – business.

G: Monkey-business (he hears the expression for the first time and likes it)..so have I monkey-business, but more than you. First monkey-business is monkey-business. Second monkey-business is donkey-business.Third monkey-business is tiger-business. I have tiger-business. He tells us he sees a few people around in the Café—waiting to speak with him. I see one or two jackals —you know what is jackal?

Alice: Like a wolf.

G: No, wolf is honor.He come, he take, directly. You can see him coming and can take measure.But jackal, you never know from where he comes, or which way will jump —he is false.

And now you must know a MOST IMPORTANT THING ABOUT MAN: MAN CANNOT STAY LONG IN ONE SUBJECTIVE STATE.

SUBJECTIVE STATE FROM A THOUSAND THING DEPENDS. You can never know the subjective state of another. IT IS A TYPICALITY OF MAN THAT NO TWO SUBJECTIVE STATES CAN BE THE SAME. THEY ARE LIKE THUMB WHORLS—EACH DIFFERENT. When you see her (Alice) in some subjective state, you not try understand what cause this—even she cannot know.. If she is angry with you, you say "She is not mad with me, her state is mad with me."

NEVER REPLY WITH INTERIOR. NEVER REVENGE ASSOCIATION HAVE.

August 2, 1936. Gare St. Lazare.

He is there waiting for us in his "station office" with the extra bottle of KRK for me, and a shopping bag with two huge watermelons and two Persian melons —special for us to eat on the train. He has separate "subjective talks"—first with Alice, then with me. Words for me: KEEP THE FIRE BURNING. ONE THING YOU MUST KNOW: NERVOUSNESS HAS A MOMENTUM, MIND CANNOT STOP NERVOUSNESS BUT IT MUST GO ON UNTIL MOMENTUM FINISHED. IMPORTANT REMEMBER THIS—WHEN YOU SEE OUR DARLING NERVOUS, LET BE – SOON WILL PASS.

To see us off: Solita, Miss Gordon, Louise, Margaret, Georgette, Monique.

As the train pulls out, our whole Knachschmidt is on the quai, under our third-class window. He stands alone, apart, and he never takes his eyes from us. There is such a look of sorrow in his eyes. As the train moves he raises his hand, palm toward us, raising and lowering three times for me in blessing, three times for Alice. I didn't see anyone else in the group at that moment—only his palm rising up three times and his eyes deep and sad and forgiving us already. . .

November 1936

Return to Paris. November 11, 1936.

First meeting for us, we embrace him in kitchen. He has prepared a pheasant dinner for us.

November 16, 1936.

We speak of changes in each one of us – Sardine is noticeably taller, etc., G turns to me and says also I make change.

I: Not outwardly, maybe?

G:Yes. I always make picture when I meet a person for the first—I always imagine him without clothes, naked; this make easy for me recognize the next time. For her (me) you know what picture make? You remember how was? Her gesture she make so— formless. (He illustrates).The picture I make: In some countries they have skin, for carry water, for milk, even I see for butter; but also use such skin for carry away merde from WC, and this the man do at night, when there is moon. This skin, filled with merde is heavy, man get tired. So he put down, beside road, in moonlight—and you know how such a hide act when put down: almost like living thing, takes positions with arms, with legs, move a little, settle down. PUT HEAD ON IT AND CHAPEAU AND COULD BE MAN. Kaki Toolook, such was my picturing for her. (The special skin used to carry off manure (human) in the moonlight is called, in Russian, Kaki Toolook.)

Nov 17, 1936.

Begin third course, first exercise. "Consciously, mechanically, chemically."

We speak of miracles.

G: Old Jews believe Jesus Christ fed many people with six, seven fishes —you remember how many was; but HOW was filled, the people, that not tell. Another example —believe He turn water into wine, but WHO get drink on such wine, that they not say. And once more—they believe He walk on water—but how DEEP WAS WATER, they not speak about that.

Thanksgiving. Turkey, his house, with a dressing made of chestnuts, sturgeon, etc.

This is the first dinner gathering for Knachschmidt since the pause: It is because this is your holy-day, your toorkey day." For himself— for his own diet—he has made "egoist thing"—a sturgeon soup. We must eat this with him, only AFTER turkey. When it comes he speaks of sturgeon: Is tiger of the sea—all fish are afraid. When he pass—not even need go near a gis- he can cut it up later return and eat. This is because of the sturgeon's scales. G has a scale brought out of the refuse for us to see. As big as an oyster shell, nearly same shape. Solita and I take home—polish and reveal beautiful form. Canary refuses a second candy—explains she is afraid will make big (around waist).

G: Ah, she afraid. Now I tell secret—always I wish see her real type, so I make big. In Russian there is expression for such size stomach—they say man has three. . (what porter wears?) Apron. Yes, man have three apron. Once I see in bath, great rich man come three big aprons, have two on each side, lift each fold for washing underneath. Necessary two men for lifting ONE apron, you can imagine how big was.

As he goes out of dining room he looks back with twinkle and says: For Canary three aprons will make moral also. Poor Canary.

Day after Thanksgiving.

We go to finish turkey. Day before, to make "partition" between main course and the desert, to "tromp-down" he had given us each one wild fruit—the small tomato-like fruit in a papery pod. Alice remembers these from childhood, so I tell him now she had subjective night. This starts him talking about these.

G: Truly, is very strange and original thing. Is God thing. Hang from under three small leaves, very beautiful, and is of such color—there is no word. Like what I write about in book (700 shades of gray were once perceptible to the human eye, in Babylonian epoch) you cannot know what color it was when you look at this. This is dead color—but when alive is SO beautiful . . even many year ago I see for first time and such impression it make, even now I could make that color.

Canary exclaims, and he says: Yes, Mees, THEN I WAS SICK MAN, FOR ART.

Once, he tells us, he painted a whole picture with this one color alone. Tells us this fruit have one most original property, nothing else on earth have such. Sometimes the tissue-like pod opens up like flower, with the orange fruit

its center. Opens up, not for sun, not for rain . . but "when air is pressing down in certain way—this he like"— and again and again it will do this., for atmospheric pressure, until it dies.

Louise eyes the candy, wants another, but does not take.

G says: Take. She says, I do not wish, Mr G. He says: You DO wish, I see how you look. Your tapeworm wish. YOU NOT GOOD MAN, IN RELATION YOUR TAPEWORM. EVEN BEAR FLY.Yes, is such expression in old Russian. Always you hear from old peasant who come down from mountain.Very great meaning have. Even bear fly—can be such thing.You can imagine bear up on top of mountain, he step over where think still is mountain and is cliff, and down he go. You are standing below. What you see? You see bear fly—he come not like dead body—but so, and so (illustrates arms out clutching, every effort tense)—he not fall, he FLY. Maybe is last fly, but meanwhile, he fly.

December 1936

Dec 5, 1936. Day of the chaplets.

Dec 6, 1936. All-fish lunch, and melon.

Two kinds of melon looking the same on the plate, one infinitely better tasting than other. We remark.

G: Yes, of course. You know, is like man —all melon same exterior have, but what is interior—that is another question. Man is man —Mr Rosevelt have two legs, two arms, like Madame Crocodile, but interior he is paralyze. So with melon—all have same exterior, same color, etc., but this one now we eat come from warm place, even more south than your South America, where emanation from sun more strong. Long ago, after accident, such plan was made: every month from some place melon is sent me—but WHAT melon, where is grown, how grown! Yet nobody know because all same exterior have. Only I know.

Canary doesn't eat prunes: I can assure you Mr G, not need.

G: Assure? How can assure you not need? You wish invite me in WC with you?(He thinks she said "show" instead of "assure"). When explained he

catches her again: Ahah, you say assure—but is same thing, philological question is—assuring and showing all from same word come. You can only ASSURE what you can SHOW; what not can show, not can assure.

Dec 8, 1936. Dinner.

Menu like old times: smoked herring, hors d'oeuvres—then baked fish dish, then soup (fish consommé), Russian cutlet – "officer cutlet" as known in Russia, as opposed to "soldier cutlet" which is 5 parts black bread to one part meat; melon (two kinds), candy (new kind) then raspberry "sausage."

The baked – fish dish. He says:You have eaten more than ten men, so much there is of—what is word, that new word you make fashion—word of ? VITAMIN.Yes, you make fashion—word of vitamin as if new thing is; calor—is old Greek word; calorie now you tell. Was time when every educate man know such thing about food. You make fashion word of vitamin but I, when boy, already begin learn about such.

G: Melon—you know, Mees Gordon, this come from place which belong England, but they not know about this there; they not see. They see only English pound, and whiskey, and English frozen meat. But you know, every month the Viceroy there tell: Prepare one melon for Mr. Gurdjieff. And even if they have to steal from other, they prepare. But I am small, man, not king; subjectively speaking. But objectively… this is for objective business.

G: Your king – you know what should do? Three of your men should kidnap him and take away—so that not even his smell remain on earth, such dirty thing is. Is Stink Idiot—what is 19th, we call Harmful Idiot, worst kind. Even when he dream, he titillate; real man when titillate make real picture around him. Miss Gordon pleaded the case: But think Mr G, to be born in such unhappy state, etc.

G: Excuse, Mees Gordon, but if he was before eight then could feel pity, but is responsible age. After eight he should have prepared—he not prepare, he not take from around him what was corresponding for him. He masturbate. He not prepare self for king. Even I prepare. WHEN SMALL BOY ALL PEOPLE AROUND ME WAS ANIMAL. I SEE—AND I KNOW FOR ME MUST NOT BE.

Canary tells how Mrs. Simpson that day made offer to give up king, etc.

G: She lie. She not wish give up to free self from bad situation; she have now inside her this state: all or nothing. Before she have cunning, now she

have appetite. She will have all or nothing. That is why she speak. Now she wish have only Big Thing.

He questions Miss Gordon about the word "cartoon" he learned last night—for his mentation meaning a comic drawing. Gordon says cartoon means caricature.G: No, cartoon is only one kind caricature. For example (he goes to painting pinned on his wall—the market- place in the Lutte des ?) here is Mr. de Hartmann—this is caricature; is exact, mathematically exact, is quintessence of line, anywhere you him recognize; but at same time something about this is comic—THIS is ART. Is evon kind of caricature, like everything. Example: there is Canary; from one side is exact like grandmother, but from other side is something quite different—is monster like all contemporary humanity. She is cartoon.

Dec 10, 1936. In café –Alice and I.

We say: Now king has left, says in radio speech not for long time will he return. He is like man without a country.

G: This case he is my colleague. Children's toy is good thing, but when see old man play with such, what you feel? Yes, shame for him. That is what king do. Alice says how she sympathizes with queen Mary who has seen her firstborn fail, etc.

G: No, not be sorry. Those people quite exceptional, not like ordinary man on earth. EARLY SHE TAKE HABIT OF VANITY—all humaneness go into ego. She have pride for class, only people who REPRESENT SOMETHING can be important for her. Already now she turn to this next son, he is now King.

He speaks of his own "cure" which is now half done; now half his inner world is free, now he begin feel like man with moustache. For us he makes a picture of his state: Now in me is very curious, very original state. Now in one room is old man and baby, and BOTH HAVE EQUAL RIGHTS. Can you imagine such situation? Baby for example like fresh air, wish open window, old man not like that, not wish, can even be harmful for him. Now you see even this rum grog I order—this for baby is not corresponding thing, but for old man is very good.Very original situation.Yes, also is terrible.

Dec 11, 1936.

Countess de Mesy and her friend join Knachschmidt at dinner.

G talks once about King business—this time about the new King. Says he is nonentity, but different kind than was brother. New King is such non entity that if, for example, he wish kiss your hand, between arising of wish and expressing it, a thousand times he forgets, and when speak he says 'I wish break your rib'. GOOF FORMULATION FOR NONENTITY—he wishes kiss your hand but he say wish break your ribs. Speaking once of the departed King, says: Only in one case I have pity for him—if he NOT marry her. Only then. . .

G: You could say that what you now have is FULLING WHOLENESS? It COULD be that?

We assure him this is exact for both.

G: Never before in English you hear such words, yet for you now this mean something. Everywhere is "initiate language." Now also begin arise in English.

After a wonderful dinner he plays a new music, then he asks Miss Gordon "Which you like best, what you eat or what you just now hear?"

Gordon: But is such different thing, Mr G.

G: For me all is same. Different octave but from same scale I compose. I hope someday the unity of the law of Heptaparaparshinokh you will understand—everywhere is same.

Dec 15, 1936.

Canary: Now once we come to my toast and I not in galoshes, Mr.G.

G: You chronically in galoshes.

As he leaves us he says he has had only one half of him massaged, masseur now waits to do other side.

G: If not do, then I be lop-sided (he wilts on one side). LOPSIDE, YOU KNOW. HAVE ONE END. Is not like stick which have two end. If man is lopside, then everything he receives is lopsided; if is on bad side then all receives is bad, if on good side then this not harmful thing. Is why man can sometimes be happy.

Dec 17, 1936.

The melons are served, G pointed to pieces at bottom of pile and says: Look now he sit down, at lunch only I cut but so delicate thing is. This begins the SIT DOWN, STAND UP talk. Sit down—where can you sit but down? Stand up—how else can you stand? In 45 languages I know, no such idiotisme as you have in your English. This is why I say only sit. People who not know think I uneducated man—I not take time to tell, only now I tell.

We tell how, as children, we were told by parents to SIT UP, meaning not to loll, etc.

G: No. Sit up not correct word. Is other word, exact.

We: What?

G: Sit RIGHT. For each this means sit as you were taught to sit for such and such occasion when such and such person present.

G: You know, three things man can make: Glue, from brain and feet, Soap, from fat around middle part. Manure, from all parts.

FUNCTION IS THE PROCESS OF TRANSFORMING FROM ONE SCALE TO ANOTHER.

Gordon: Oh, I always wanted a definition of function. I did not know it was as simple as that.

G: Yes, this is what function mean, exact.

Dec 19, 1936. Lunch (Canaryless)

He has Michele, the seventeen-year old specially trained girl, there for us to see. She speaks only French. G asks Miss Gordon, in English, what she thinks of this girl.

Gordon: I think very nice, Mr G, I good feeling have about her.

G(to Alice): She tell like English. Now Mees Gordon, I wish you listen while I ask Theen One.

Alice speaks from her instinctive, telling exactly what she sees: I see big change from this morning in Café, Mr G—already something happen to her. Now I see more deeply, one thing she have is not good, I cannot say what is. I always look at hands (Michele's stumpy thumbs!). I think you can make of her what you wish, she is clever.

G: You think can be educated by me ?

A: Yes, in worldliness.

G: Truth, you are good. (He turns to me): She (Alice) unconscious education have. She not education from book, but somewhere unconsciously she take from life. Truth, when I ask you, I kill two rabbits. Now I see much Mees Gordon, you, in relation Thin One, are djopa.

He tells how he tried to educate Tall One and child—in beginning was good, she put attention on small thing and I not have to tell. If I have to tell how to do, I can do myself. But soon dirt begin come, everywhere I look is dirt, even apartment smell. Also, for other things noticed. Now this one I prepare special—I MUST HAVE SOMEONE. I have right, Mess Gordon. I must have someone think about small thing around house. Before when was no one, was very difficult for me—I assurance quiet night, quiet morning, never can have. Always some idiot thing to do. I get up, inside feel good, then I see dirt and for me, inside, all is spoiled. All is lost, all, all. Terrible thing. No soap.

He sits with us after our piqûre.

G: Ah, now I hungry, but for you it best not eat yet, so also I not eat. I see around me objective just, and when man see such he must sacrifice his subjective. THIS IS ONE ASPECT OF RELIGIOUS MORALITY. This is what religion teaches. Religion is morality. MORALITY—for you English is not big word. In Russian we have two words: One mean morality such as we speak of; other mean also morality, but more strong. It mean OPPOSITE OF SHAMELESS—Objective Shame. Man must have.

Dec 22, 1936.

We look at the lighted tree. We look at 40 boxes, one of which will be named for Knachschmidt. We look at roast turkey and a pig's head roasted. "You notice what sympathetic expression he have?"

Then we look at a herring, very special, from England come. Only is not Russian, is Jewish, from Russia. Today cannot find in Russia, only in England where many Russians have gone and continued "family habit" the preparation of this herring "a general herring." He must soak five days in milk to take out salt.

For Gordon's toast: Your health, also health of all Jewish who create such thing.

Gordon, he tells us, is not part Jew, she is all Jew because is Scotch. Scotch is all Jew. You know—every race in every country seven kind of people have—English, Tartar, French, etc. BUT JEW HAVE 49 IN EACH COUNTRY.

A LEGOMONISM EXISTS THAT TELLS UNTIL LAST AGE NO CLEANER PEOPLE EXIST THAN JEW. Never they mix. If they Intermarry, then all children from such mixing die—such law was. Only last hundred years do they mix. But before, were clean people, very special.

Canary: Chosen people, in Bible they tell, chosen by God.

G: God not interest such business. Always among many idiots one ober-idiot exist, he more idiot than ordinary, therefore he is ober-center-of-gravity. THIS CASE MOSES COULD BE SUCH. HE CENTER OF GRAVITY JEWISH PEOPLE; HE MAKE CHOSEN, NOT GOD.

Miss Gordon says something about Great Britain.

G: Great Britain, how you call—you know WHY call great? This they take from time when Bretagne (French) was important, the n in England go many more people, so they call it Great Bretagne. But from France originally come; here was center of gravity. Now today Germany do same thing. Have corresponding names.

Gordon asks what names.

G:That I not tell.You could sell for thousand francs. I tell only quintessence, main fact; I know all begin from two people—from Greeks and Romans. Your historians make other thing, for me only this exist Greek Roman, and from these two stream merde flow and many strange things happen these two stream on the way.

Gordon: Always you tell two original people, Mr G. Never you speak about people from North. Yet all northern Europe is mixed with these people. Scandinavian.

G: Scandinavian? I not know such name. I know only Samoyede. But this was not important people—at time of Greek and Roman was only second-gravity people. Later they come, they mix, Samoyode you have such title?

I: Yes, we have Samoyode (A Ural-Altaic language group people, out of Siberia originally—have dogs named Samoyedes—history refers to rain of "dog barbarian")

G: Samoyede—you know what mean exact? This mean SELF-EATING.

Gordon talks about people from North, and Normans in France who are clearly a northern people, etc.

G: From the north how YOU tell. For me, all is mixture. From same source come materials. Only is different how they are mixed. They make of these northern countries you speak about a cocktail. Imagine I have 7 different cocktails here before me. All taste different, even look different.Here is one you call "yellow cocktail." BUT ONLY I KNOW THAT MERDE WHEN STAY LONG HERMETICALLY SEALED TURNS YELLOW, DARK AND MORE YELLOW.

Study peoples, see how they flow from two main sources, how they mix, how they divide. Even the English people divide—many thousand kind there are. Even are the kind that eat margarine and the kind that eat oleo-margarine—both artificial butter, each with separate stink. Even British people divide selves by what stink they have.

Gordon agrees, perhaps too willingly.

G: Mees Gordon, you are English. English never see such thing can be for him; always he see for someone else. ENGLISH NOT HAVE SENSING ON EARTH FOR ENTERING INTO SITUATION OF OTHERS.

We have special potatoes, curried, spiced.

G: Mees, Gordon, never I think you see in England such potato?

Gordon: Never, Mr G, and cooked in so much butter.

G: Look, already she begin worry. You know, Mees Gordon, such potato as this must be BOILED in butter. And as you know potato is difficult to make clean, so first butter must be proured off, then again must be boiled in butter. But still is not clean.

Gordon: Then three times is boiled in butter.

G: Yes, three times boiled in butter.

Gordon:I KNEW there must be three.

G: Excuse, Mees Gordon, there is a fourth time in this preparation. Fourth time, potato must be baked in butter.

Gordon: Oh now must go to seven.

G: Yes of course. Or three, or seven. This case, seven.

Yakina takes one of his cigarettes.

G: Ah now I see you have satisfaction. You know, is law. SO MUCH SATIS-FACTION YOU HAVE, SO MUCH DISSATISFACTION MUST HAVE. I have book statistic. In this everything exact valuum have. And the rule is, for payment add one zero. Example, if your satisfaction cost 50 franc, you pay me 500 franc. If 100, you pay 1000. You pay in money of course, on earth only is money for paying. If not pay in money, YOU PAY ME IN COAL. You know what this mean—pay me in coal?

Canary: I know. It means you pay in hell.

G: No, there is more than this.This expression very ancient understanding have. In hell of course is coal for fire, for roasting you. But HOW you pay. Example: for each person it take so many kilos coal for roasting him; ten kilo her, ten kilos him, twenty for me. So, if you pay me in coal, this mean that each day YOU MUST TAKE FROM UNDER ME SO MANY PIECES OF COAL AND PUT UNDER YOU, and if enough you must pay then I can be very comfortable. But YOUR situation …. you can picture how will be?

Dec 23,1936.

Before lunch he come in room with suckling pig in his arms, bare, white, uncooked, holding like baby. He gives to me—Take, hold, here come Thin One (and I sit it up in my lap for Alice to see) There is water inside it. The water dribbles out on my skirt, just like Baby.

Lunch. Hopeless Idiot Toast.

To Louise: Hopeless, yes Mees, you are hopeless.Your health. May devil help arise in you Hope. (He draws attention to Louise's expression). Look, she not like Devil. Angel then. May Angel help arise in you Hope.

He speaks more about Louise: You know, with her now my obligation finish. Now all depend from her, from her surroundings, who she be with. Moreover one thing I can tell. If she continue eating how now eat, then soon will look like second cousin of what we now eat (suckling pig). Also for all of you I now tell. NOW FAT CAN HINDER WORK. Before, was necessary have fat, NOW MUST TAKE OFF. MUST MAKE ALL HARD, COMPACT.

Melon comes on, now, freshly cut, wonderful.

G: Crocodile, can you imagine that on earth such melon be?

Alice says she likes melon because is sweet.

G: SWEET YOU MUST NOT LIKE,YOU MUST USE.

Alice: I use for energy, Mr G.

G: Excuse, you use not for energy, you use because you are slave for sweet. One thing I notice about who like sweet. Always atmosphere around him is—what is opposite sweet? Sour? No, sour can be sometimes good thing. Bitter, yes. Always in atmosphere around him who like sweet, there is bitter.

Canary meanwhile is manifesting admiration for his mentation.

G: You LIKE how I tell, Mees? You like my mentation?

Canary: Always you speak objectively Mr. G, anybody would like.

G: Not anybody, only American. Always you say ANYBODY. To YOU it seem wonderful, but not to anybody; not my fault is that American not have such idea of mentation. Moreover I tell: IN OBJECTIVE SENSE I NOT OBJECTIVE MENTATION HAVE. I NOT COMPLETE INITIATE. THERE ARE MANY THOUSAND COMPLETE MAN ON EARTH—NOT IN WORLD BUT ON EARTH I TELL. MANY THOUSAND COMPLETE MAN. I NOT YET COMPLETE. I STILL HAVE FAR GO.

Dec 24, 1936. In café.

His swollen hand. I am there to offer services as chauffeur. He speaks of how difficult for him to get about Paris when depending on taxi, cannot direct driver because knows only three names—Etoile, Opera, Montmartre; when he drives his own car he goes directly where he wishes, and can even find the smallest streets.

I: You are like Indian for direction, our American Indian could go through forest reading signs no white man could see.

G: Not for forest I am. I SPECIALIST FOR SAND. Never can I get lost in desert.You know, how travel in desert depend from two secrets which pass from father to son, a legomonism. One I can tell. Example..always big ridges lie in a certain way in relation to wind. Before you start across, look how lie these dunes. If lie transverse your path, then must always keep transverse, with sun over shoulder, making slight change for changing sun. These dunes never change for ordinary small storm, only big storm can move and make different.This you see is very important to know because once you 50 meters from starting-place, there is no right, no left.

Dinner. We help pack his 40 Christmas boxes.

He speaks to Margaret about drinking. Look you are yak, yet you not drink even one quarter what Canary drink.You are big animal, must do all big. Look your glass, then look Canary—she four times drink what you drink, yet think how many canaries it take make one yak.

Margaret: I have so much to say I cannot speak.

G: Speak? Not necessary speak. Only have shame.

Comes Canary's toast.

Canary: Always when comes my toast, I in galoshes, Mr G. Almost is like law.

G: Mees, is not LIKE law. You know, it take seven years for create science idiotisme, with great knowledge typicality, polarity. Everything about each is known. Three month I work, many book I write, I secretary of man who create this science. So for you is typicality that always you be in galoshes.Your profession is to be in galoshes. Look, you see, they not even laugh any more.

Canary: Chronically in galoshes, once you tell. Chronic, like disease.

G: Not ONLY like disease. Chronic have two meaning—in Greek are two words sound nearly alike. Chronos – concerning time. Other word chronos(?) mean KEEPING. When I say you chronically in galoshes I mean YOU KEEP YOURSELF IN GALOSHES. You notice many newspaper named Chronicle—this not concern time; it have sense of KEEPING you au courant.

Later:

G: I see arise around me three lice—fat like canary.(None of us follows his meaning here) Presently Alice wonders aloud "I wonder why does lice bite?" and we laugh at her grammar but he says (not realizing why we laugh): THIS NOT IDIOT QUESTION. WHY IS ALWAYS WHERE REASON IS. WHY IS FOR WHAT NOT IS KNOWN BUT AT SAME TIME EXISTS.

We come to melon course. He offers Alice a certain piece which is sweet but not the squeamish sweet we speak about yesterday. I remind how he tells "bitter in atmosphere."

G: Not just in atmosphere. He emanate bitter. All what come from him is bitter—saliva, merde, emanation, all the same.

For you this word merde make shock; but it is relative word. For me when I tell it is nothing, so long and so much I know about it. And you know, is not always bad thing. Sometimes it can have more vivifyingness than roses. Merde sometimes MORE ESTEEMED CAN BE THAN YOUR TEACHER.

Canary: If is that kind.

G: Always I tell IF.

Christmas Day.

I go early-8:30- to his house to see if he needs chauffeur. He has been up since 6, is quintessence of wide-awake. He invites me for breakfast at Café. He takes cheese in pocket.

In Café, he orders butter for me: You, being American, take habit for butter and in truth is very good thing with this cheese. I not order for me only because I not have such habit.

After we finish eating (in silence) he pushes back plate and says: NOW WE CAN SERVICE NATURE AGAIN. You know. this is what food is for, for servicing nature. TRUTH WE ARE SLAVE, SUCH POOR SLAVE. Nature not GIVE this food—all life men must work to earn it and when he eat, is not for him but for servicing nature. Nature only give ONE thing, he give atmosphere, this air. This is all he give—for all the rest man must work whole lifetime. Only air. And that old Idiot what create such, he swagger now. Imagine, swagger for having create such absurdity.

I give no Indication that I have ever heard of second food, and how to use. He goes on. He tells about comic pictures Mr.Salzmann made—God and Mr. Gurdjieff. G is visiting heaven, not dead, but as spirit. God is in chair, has work around him, even typists, and has in hand a compass for making circles. When God hears who is coming in he hides his compass, he puts it under him, sitting on it. This picture has a comic aspect, very, for him; he laughs like small boy when telling it to me.

Later Alice comes to Café—titillating, she tells G that today is first Christmas Dionne quintuplets are allowed to spend with entire family, I say: Before this, they were kept apart, considered valuable, scientists with study, they think some valuable psychological elucidation.

G: Study? How study when scientists come from same barrel? Such nonentity is. With such thing as five from same birth there can be NOTHING TO STUDY NO INDIVIDUALITY CAN BE THERE.

He talks about the money the parents have made: Now many people are jealous because these parents are rich, and many people try for same thing. Even governments offer reward for many children. BUT IF PEOPLE UNDERSTOOD WHAT REALLY MEANS THIS, THEN THEY WOULD

CRY. Now man begin breed like mice. Never before in history was such thing as this—four, five at a time. Twins were ever rare thing. Soon now five will not be notable. People will speak only about six, then of seven. Nobody see what this mean—QUANTITY DESTROYING QUALITY.

Alice notices he looks well and he says, Yes, I am well. Then: Well, how relative is this word. It not take count of terrible struggle of functions. In me war—real war. SOMETIMES EVEN HEAD COULD NOT REMAIN INDEPENDENT—FALLS SO…(gestures sleeping exhaustion with his head.)

Christmas dinner at his house. All Knachschmidt, including Georgette and Margaret.

Before we go in for dinner I make Alice show him lump on her knee, result of her fall. He looks closely at it, moves, seems amused: Now you be happy you have such thing, now I know you never will have in throat. Also, from this, many another thing I know you will never have. You be glad for this.

Much later at table he refers again to this lump. Speaking of Alice: Thin One not hungry, I notice she take long time select what pieces she will eat. (To her): You should eat like mother—mother with 7-month baby. All of you must know that she will be first to give birth to a being—this will be an ABSTRACT BEING—whether he be angel or devil we not know. There already on her he begin rise (on her knee). Then to me: Why you see such thing and not tell? You now should be happy. In my book I will write about this first 'birning' and you will be written about like Mary Magdalene because first you see. Only after I see.

Solita goes in galoshes when she refers aloud to the real Mary Magdalene and what she saw in Jesus. G. rages: But I not tell what see. Only analogically I speak. Always you far go. Moreover what could she see, this Muggy Muddalene you speak about? She see nothing, she only prostitute.

Georgette asks if melon came from North Africa and G roar that NEVER he eat anything French. All French food is for him like soup à 1'oignon, as is all French mentation; all English is like frozen meat. He struggles to find French equivalent of frozen meat. Congele, glace, refrigere. We spend long time on philological question. He roars about French language, it has no words, never he can find word. 718 words he KNOWS it not have.

G: I GOD OF LANGUAGES. Only not for such idiot thing as this that anyone can learn. I speak scientific, very simple I speak. Why learn idiot words good only for idiot talk. I not have time.

Gordon: What a picture of God that is. Speaking only scientifically, but every word exactly understood—every word known like leaf on tree going back to a main root.

G: Yes, is so.

Canary: But for such word, you not need know, Mr.G, such nose you have.

G: This can be so, only nose is no good in alien country, good only where in general land is familiar. Imagine yourself in oriental country where not one syllable, not one word, have for you association. Such is how I am with your English. But one thing I notice, always can make understood anywhere, THE LANGUAGE OF THE SMILE. Anywhere on earth with a smile you can get what you wish—wheat for horse, water, bread, with a smile—because this smile exactly correspond with what the other man feels.

Dec 30, 1936.

G: This most important day for you. 24 hours from now, when will assimilate, you begin be responsible for all your acts—even for unconscious acts. Beginning then, you take a position of responsibility. And a record is kept for each. All you do is written in red or in black in the Angel Gabriel's book, not for everyone is this record kept, but only for those who have taken a position of responsibility. There is a Law of Sins; now you are subject to this law. If not fulfill all your obligations, you will pay. For every satisfaction, so much dissatisfaction. If you do not so acquit yourself with Nature, you will pay.

THE OCTAVE: The octave is the mathematical formulation, in respect of sound, of that series of phases through which all creation—physical and psychological—must pass upward or downward in the phenomenal changes of nature.

January 1937

Jan 2, 1937, Dinner. "The four on a rope."

He comes into the room in time to hear my last word of titillation, "January"--sits down says: January, what January? Alice says that Jan 6. is my birthday.

G: Ah, January 6. Then is not tail of donkey if is your birthday.

I: Epiphany, according to Catholic calendar.

G: No, that cannot be. Epiphany mean when many people come together, for be baptized. Must be mistake somewhere. That day was when Jesus was baptized. In Armenian and some other countries, always birthday and baptism day are same day. Jesus was not baptized until twelve days after birth and because of this you can make a joke in Armenia which is big insult—always make angry. You say, Jesus must have been a premature baby, they were afraid to baptize the day of birth, had to wait twelve days until he be strong enough and not die. This make Armenian very angry. But in many countries, Armenia also, Jesus is not the here, but John the Baptist. From legomonism I know that he it was who was nurse to Jesus for first12 years, in Essene Brotherhood; after this first twelve years, then the responsibility to another give. This is the story how I know from legomonism.

At table he speaks of the melon—always best at the end of its season. Soon no more will be; already now, in place from where come, they dry this melon, they cut in slices and dry in sun. This they must do because only this melon grows there, nothing else for food. Except one kind of chestnut, but not called chestnut, called pig-nut—it is a three-sided nut. And one curiosity about this nut—if eat too much of, it make drunk. Even the bread they make from the flour of this nut makes you drunk. People eat, and afterward must sleep because they are drunk. Those who know about this of course not eat.

Jan 8, 1937.

He returns from three days taking the baths at Vichy. He is tired, but cooks a milk lamb for us—the Rope Four. We do not talk of work done in absence. He seems to be in something; he looks at each one of us; with terrible penetration, then leaves us—saying only to Alice: Theen, if you did not identify with it (her cheek carbuncle) this can be worth more than first prize in the Lottery which is 3 million francs.

He is so tired at table. He says he has gone several days without teeth, and now tonight, with them, there is suffering. He would not even eat fingers of godmother, and is even too tired to drink tears of godmother. A moment later he says: What is it you drink? (He has forgotten the word 'tears'). We tell, and he says: How my memory is bad for such idiot thing only one moment ago I say this word and now when wish say again, I forgot: But can remember a page of writing, such specific have my memory, even where on page come a certain thought, even I can remember mistakes in printing—exact where on page they come. For such thing I have memory, but not for small life thing. Of course this will pass.

He excuses himself early from table, after Alice has rebound his finger with the new Bandtex, discarding the old grease-soaked bandage. He says: You excuse me, Mees Gordon, now I go rest. I need such, if stayed any longer then could be dangerous for me. I will take 90% risk, but never will I take 100% risk,

Gordon: Even sometimes you take hundred percent risk, Mr. G.

G: No, NEVER I take. (But he smiles as he goes out the door.)

Jan 12, 1937. (Night of his birthday; or Jan 13?)

This is also anniversary of my total abstinence from cigarettes. I tell. He speaks of man's "dogs": This for you make source for force. But at same time any man can not smoke. You must smoke. Only not take habit. You not wish do what any man can do?'

Crocodile: I remember your grandmother.

G: Smoke then.

We speak of "dogs", and Alice says a fine big dar is one or hers.

G: No, this only artificial. Man even artificial dog can have, such is man. Man have few dogs. . . smoking is one, alcohol another. He has made a dish which as he says "make melody in mouth."

We have no place for the sweets.

G: Eat, eat, Mees Gordon. Still remain sweets.

Gordon: Ah, but your hospitality is so great.

G: Truth, is so—is my idioticity.

We laugh.

G: Yet not so foolish thing I tell. Among Jews hospitality is not known —they call it idioticity. Many Jews I know in all countries, NEVER they have friend, each family stay apart. They cannot spend for such hospitality because only they see cost of small thing, never big. Never they have heart. This is humanity-ness, one of the seven aspects of humanity. You notice how I tell?— humanity-ness. Humanity not tell all. Only address give. Humanity-ness gives property of humanity.

Jan 17, 1947.

The dish he has made is called SALANKA.

G: This is dish of Ghengis Khan. Also he like trout, that spotted trout from one river in Tibet. And this he have fresh every day. He have organization even 100,000 people from Tibet to wherever he is, in Caucasus for example, and this trout in buckets they pass. One man 25 kilometers go, very fast, then next man, and so on. Such Emperor, such influence he have. You know, sometimes history show that one man could take almost all world. Ghengis Khan was such. Ten your Napoleons he could in pocket put. Alexander of Macedonis took much—even today in many places they keep souvenir of him, almost like holy thing.

Brach (brook)—to chick-make with inner self but outwardly to treat as brother. A brach person is like damaged goods—can be sold, but only at a loss, never bring profit to the shop owner.

"You must think of yourself as if you are sitting in prison". (apropos of what Katie??)

The French can do nothing when hungry. The English are a little better. The Americans can forget and work on—especially if they got paid a little more money.

The rose is the king of flowers. Always in Eastern literature is put with nightingale. Loving rose. And besides loving, rose can have many another emotion which idiot English have no name for. Yes, even Nature can feel loving—like woman.

French have no friendship for anybody. Americans have too much—a disease with them. Even in their house they have special room named for strangers (guest room). But in some countries is real friendships—such that if I have one shirt only, I am obliged to give half of it to my friend. ACCUSTOM YOURSELF TO FORGET NOTHING (Reflexes.)

February 1937

THE RIVIERA TRIP. Cannes,

Feb 6.

Yakina & Canary arrive. Dinner Hotel Splendide.

G: Yakina, you must be happy here, near mountain. (Then to us): You know yak one specific have which is very original. He heavy animal, too much insides have yet he always go where most difficult to go—like goat. Always he choose where are stones, where NO animal would wish go except goat. But goat is light animal, for him such going is natural. Yak also have one other very original thing, when he make… how I call?

Crocodile: Mama-papa business?

G: No the other.

Canary: You call that so-so, Mr.G.

G:Yes, when he make so-so. For this yak very original movement he make, not like any other animal on earth. If you could watch, very much about human psyche you could learn. Now Yakina, never again can you be alone, you see—they will watch, such curiosity they have. They will make holes in wall. But (to us) she must not know you watch because then she would do consciously, not automatically like always; she would play, like artiste. Later (about Crocodile): Look, she wonder still about mama-papa business.

Crocodile, you are right. For this also, she make different. If you could watch, very much you could learn about this business. But of course you could not watch. But if you could—with some liquor—make drunk and then ask question "Which posture you like?" you would learn she take one posture that NEVER you could imagine.

Canary (with indignation): Yakina knows nothing about such things, Mr. G.

Dinner. He drinks armagnac first time in many days , G: Look I am already drunk, and only small mount take. But all body wait to take. I assimilate more than is.

Feb 7, 1937. Two cars.

We go to Eze on Moyenne Corniche for lunch. Hors d'oeuvre trout, baby lamb and vieux armagnac. First we must climb up to old town (and believe me, he sits below watching that we do it)—all except frozen Canary. "What you need, armagnac and pepper."

G: Trout, he very spoiled fish. Not can live in any river but only when water move fast over stones and difficult places, only then can he be happy. Also you notice one thing—never any sauce will mix with him, only butter—fresh butter. This alone mix with what he have specific under skin. Alice is full of retorts (also Armagnac!) and this brings about his observation that today she must have put on the right stocking.

G: Such belief there is, if put on right stocking, then all day be right for you.

Alice: Yes, I know about that, negroes in south tell.

G: But only one side they tell—lopside. Example: they do not know that if you born odd month, 1,3,5—then always it must be left; if even, then must be right first.

THIS IS CONJURY—you know what is conjury?

Canary: Means: with swearing (con-with, jure-to swear) with will; but we use only in sense of magic.

G: No, conjury is not magic, is real English word, real English meaning have. Wish, not wish, CONJURY YOU MUST BELIEVE BECAUSE ALL LIFE CONSIST FROM CONJURY. For example, what I do today can be good for me, because I do it; but for Mees Gordon would not be good, would be opposite, because is objective conjury and parallel with this is scientific knowledge.

He takes us down from high moments with a reminder about Time. Points to one of the patron's girls who once he held on his knees as baby; now she sits at table with sweetheart, grown up, too important now to sit on G's knee.

G: But I would not wish her to sit there now. When was small I liked to smell, was sweet; but if now she would sit I would not wish even her smell, she would stink, stink. Such thing has Heropass made of her in so short time, (Then to Canary): And you too are not now what was one year ago, ten year ago. Today are not what was yesterday, and tomorrow will not be what you are today. Time take from you, will make stink of all, such is life.

Feb 8, 1937 .

There is terrible sick stooped old lady in Hotel Splendide, with her daughter, English. G says: Look, Mees Gordon, you what is? (Meaning the old one) IS SQUEEZED AUBERGINE.

Alice: That must be her daughter.

G looks and says: Yes from same kitchen garden is; only is squeezed potato, frozen potato.

He has a formulation for all the Riviera people—PAINT AND THEN, WITH CEREMONY, THROW IN SEA. Like old automobile you paint and make exterior like new, but still is only good for throwing in the sea. But with ceremony, big ceremony.

He sits in his Cannes Café (Café des Allées)—I forget just how we were talking about cunning. He gives us a formulation:

NAKED FOR COMBINATION IS CUNNING

He hears music. He says always at important moments in his life there is music (he has some decision to make). G: Long time music center of gravity was, writing was by the way. I remember a 'pianina' I once heard up in the mountains behind us, at St Vallier—so fine and clear were the notes in the mountains. Is different thing, music high up. There the vibration is more fat.

We go on picnic away from the mimosa and sunlight up into the snows and we open cans of sardines, anchovies, tuna-fish oil dripping on hands and only snow to wash in—and he is in his element sitting over cold food on a patch of snow, on a 45 degree slant, with jagged snow peaks circling us; and if he could only have his hand organ up there and play to us (from snow peak still higher above us) we would know something about the DEEVINE!

Tea in Nice:

Alice: They are dancing out there on the terrace, Mr G.

G: Everywhere they dance. But you know what is? Is practice for passion. This is how I see with my special eye. They masturbate publicly, you can see in faces. Some can even no longer masturbate—on their face you see "Please memory please", they hoping for association which will take them back to time when they had such thing. Never can I look on dancing—only when both are young, but this you never see. Or old woman with young man, or old man with young woman.

Monte Carle, Feb 9, 1937.

He takes his whole "tail". We sit in the de luxe café opposite the Casino and the Hotel de Paris, first. And he says: One custom I have, always in Monte Carlo. To all the children I give money and they must play all in the Casino. If win, then half they give to me. So now (and he gives 100 francs to each of those deemed children—Margaret, Solita, Dmitrivanich and me).We have a wild half hour gambling. Solita more than doubles her hundred, I come back with 150, Margaret and the brother are cleaned out. We divide with him our winnings. A "boorjouii" lunch in the Casino café restaurant. I want to remember G picking up a trout skull and sucking out its eyes in that place!

We take the La Turbie road home, G gets stuck in the a blind alley, tears off fender paint and knocks two pebbles from a Frenchman's entrance and pays and gives candy which they leave scornfully on their wall where he places it. Curses, yelling, a Buick penned in a space for a Rosengart … but he gets out with "help".

Feb ?, 1937.

Margaret and Solita return to Paris by train. We, in two cars, return via St. Raphael with Vichy (!) spoken of as the night's stop. Rain and rain, cars lose each other—Alice and I get to Lyons at 11PM and rush out at 5 AM for Vichy, thinking he might be there with brother and Gordon in car. But he isn't and there is a telephone call at noon—he will be there by 2.

3:30—I am in street looking up toward the gare—I see a high square car NOSING down the street, nosing in at each corner curb as if to smell if this is the hotel place—and finally he arrives. His car is packed with boxes of food, both old (Paris to Riviera) and new (St Raphael wine, red and white) and Dmitri is in the back. He "comes up" when back porch boards are lifted. The boxes slide away, the mimosa parts and his haggard white beardy face appears. "Oh, jee swee mort!"

There are Vichy tail people—a dinner for twelve—and trout again. G tells a "fresh trout" story . . about the Tiflis fish merchants famous for humor—how to know if a trout is fresh you smell behind the ear, just as you smell a chicken in the Mary-jane.

Monto-Carlo addenda: Who from Paradise go out, he go automatically; who from hell go out, he go where he wish, he individuality have. Try this small philosophy understand.

Feb 28-Mar 1, 1937. The Rouen week-end.

KNOWING YOUR TAPEWORM IS MORE IMPORTANT THAN KNOWING GOD.

March 1937

Mar 2, 1937.

He calls me to help peel potatoes—one bushel, "enough for 20 people." They are not, just boiled, he squeezes them in his hands, ekh-ekh-ing for the burn. Then he squeezes in 4 pounds of butter. Then I add a quart of brown liquid—18 spices cooked together, then grate hard eggs then bowl of chopped onion. This is dish called CARAVANPASHI.

In desert there is one man like king, he know all, sometimes even for his thing and harem alone he have twenty camel. He command all the men because he know most. About desert where he live. And this dish he eat- -Caravanpashi (the dish of the King of the Caravan).

It is as hot as the hinges.

G: Can you imagine, Mees Gordon, how would be to eat this dish beside oasis, well, with fresh cold water? This dish have ALL. Only need this and can work all day. Working man eat plain (as we eat it), but for people who sit all day, yogurt must eat with. One spoon yogurt in mouth, one spoon this, then easy pass.

Look, Theen One not like. This not according to your American gout. Crocodile (aside to Gordon) :True, both ways.

Presently he asks: How mean, both ways? Another meaning has this word?

Crocodile: We have American slang word, Mr. G, not nice word, sound exactly like French word gout, only this means for us something that have no taste, no substance, nothing in it you can recognize. Such thing we call goo.

G: Goo…very good word, already I can use this word (Already he is seeing the sick expressions on Gordon's and Canary's faces). Goo…goo…this I know is very good word. Even in Bible is. You know, Mees Gordon, how Bible begin: In the beginning there was…GOO! People also can be such.

Mar 3, 1937. He comes suddenly from kitchen into salon.

You know, Mess Gordon, there is one country called Khaffiristan where people one strange custom have: always they begin dinner with the sweet, then roast, then soup, then hors, d'oeuvre. Many thousand years a civilized people live here—is high in mountain—those mountain that shut off India. Those people very strong. Even here I see 200 ENGLISH PEOPLE who are slave, they work like donkey, with my own eye I see. Many traveler try to this country, even they try make of it what they made of Tibet; but these Khaffiri own (control) all the mountain passes and only let pass who they wish pass. Afghanistan, Armenia, Russia put many thousand men in those mountains, try to pass through, but Khaffiri with one stone can kill many thousand because every stone they know. Also they shoot with gun—in 100 shots they never miss one—can write your name on tree at distance. Yet they are honor people, once say will let pass you can count on them—only you must pay high. But not money. Money they not wish. You must buy your way with one of three things —women, guns or horses. Only these they like. And always these people stay in own country, they are satisfied, not wish go any other place. This is good country—mountains—high places. So now . . We will begin our dinner like them, with sweet (a sweet macaroni dish). Come, come, EAT. This is kind of people we wish be.

At dinner he speaks about English travelers—they will go thousand kilometers see one place because friends tell about, but NOTHING in between they see. Ask them about a mountain or a lake, on the way, they cannot reply because have not seen.

This leads to discussion about SEEING.

Margaret laughed at this picture of English, so he turns to her and says: But also American thing is. Americans also are idiots for "seeing". For example, Yakina, you not notice one thing that change my face. (He twirls his mustache). You not see one thing about me? (His mustache is again turning black at the roots, he has spoken of this in café with Alice).

Yakina: I see nothing Mr. G, expect your mustache turns up.

G: This is crying thing on my face, and you not see. Yet always you look on my face, many months you look.

Y: I look at your eyes, Mr. G.

G: Excuse, man must not look one part—eye, nose—man must total see, this is a normal vision.

Y: But am I not interested in mustaches, I look at sculptural…

G: Scoolpto . . . You offend me with this word. I am scoolpto - many times on earth I am known for this. Sculptor see ALL—even I can see your navel. This is crying thing on my face. Good expression? Even your Shakespeare could not write such.

He goes out of room, Margaret wishes to argue that color does not change a thing as much as form does. Thin One calls him back. Margaret tells him that a change in color is not as noticeable as a sculptural change.

G: Yes, Mees, I agree. In your American art books is written so. Yes, M-e-e-s... but still I am a changed man. You know why? One week ago I would not discuss with you, I not have time to waste so, but now . . (he twirls his mustache and takes gigolo pose). I have auspicious exterior and so I must do everything corresponding, even titillate with you.

Mar 4, 1937. We have (among other things) boiled chicken.

G: You know what kind of cheeken is?

Alice: Is not fiancée, Mr. G?

G: Is fiancée. Never satisfaction had. Specially they make so . . once each day with such chicken they put in another (rooster) for make play, but never they let do. When wish make mama-papa business, they take off.

Gordon: Why torment so?

G: There is also something else I remember. In Russia is one fish (he gives the name to Dr. Stjernval and then says, "Even doctor not know name this fish"). Every day they take this fish from water and BEAT HIM. Then put back. Many many times they do this. This make liver large—the liver very expensive is. Only rich people can eat.

Crocodile: Anger makes the liver big?

G: Yes, somehow is so. And such liver it is—have active element, like what this chicken have.

Gordon grouses under breath about cruelty to animals: One would have to be sure that only a deserving person ate such food, after such cruelty. Then he tells us about the bouillon which came from the six chickens he has—best part is in bouillon and this we will eat tonight if we can liquidate the Banque de France we all have pressing on us . We decide we can.

Canary: Mr. G, may I also invite Yakina? She think she in galoshes because of last night?

G: She remember?

Canary: Oh, yes, she knows she was impudent. (NOTE FROM MA: I was very angry when I heard this gratuitous interpretation. Answered that I hadn't the faintest idea that I was impudent, that I have too much reverence for Mr. Gurdjieff ever to say anything to him that I could consider impudent.)

G: Not <u>was</u> impudent. She <u>is</u> such. One Russian expression there is, you tell her this. (He gives it in Russian, the Dr. translates): A HUNCHBACK CAN BE MADE STRAIGHT ONLY IN THE TOMB.

<u>Mar 5, 1937.</u>

A French friend of Georgette's is there—21 year old girl, B.A., M.A., PhD, Sorbonne, etc. Yvank Rock is her pen name. G knows where the "corn" is.

At table: Mees Gordon, you know I have long memory, but WHAT memory—every detail for forty years—and now I bet you I know her (Yvan's) uncle or cousin or father—somewhere I meet, even if forty years back, I remember.You know from where come—from Araby (pronounced Aravie).

Then he tells Yvan that Solita is one-half Canary, one-half Jew; and that next to her sits one who is one-half crocodile and one-half Jew—this how he reads our genealogical tree. She of Exotic Descent looks at us poor mongrels.

I say to Yvan: You must be afraid, finding yourself next to a crocodile.

Yvan: Afraid? Moi, I <u>never</u> have fear.

She takes another drink when there has been no toast announced. Candidate for Armagnac is what she was called, so will it be.

G: Aravie. I could even prove, such science there is. I can resurrect by smell instinct of nation from which she come.

Yvan warms up another toast. G watches, then says: You not feel strange here?

Yvan: When I heard that music (G played in the salon before dinner) I felt myself promenading among the Pyramids, une musique sacrée. (We think she is kidding, but she isn't. She goes on): "Vous êtes la demeure de ma vie antérieure, she says.

G: Tell, Canary, what she say.

Canary just can't translate, it's embarrassing. He howls at another one of us, I say: "She says you are the living place of her past life" and she turns on me and says NOT past life, previous life. And she goes on about man falling out of space into the death of life. She did what Margaret named "the smoke spiral" to illustrate the arising of man. French has no adequate expression for this but she has gesture. (Katie left out fact that when she said "une musique sacrée", G reached his arm across the table and seriously, with beautiful expression, shook her hand—Note from M. A.)

We come to coffee. Coffee from Aravie. "Coffee of my country," she says. He watches what he has made for us to watch. Presently he says: Look, soon she will make passport.

Canary: For going?

G: No, not for going. (Then, to Alice): Big difference there is between going and coming.

Mar 9, 1937.

Lola is there for lunch, big headache, no appetite. G babies her along until he turns on her with rage for shock. It's about the platter of fresh greens. We have all commented on estragon at that season, fresh, young.

G (to Lola): Not even your president can eat such thing now. But I can eat. Next month I this not will eat. You not know why? Because then everybody can eat this thing, in all the market you can buy. I EAT ONLY RARE THING what nobody can find; when everybody eat I not eat, there will be other thing. (Then to us): Too bad she not understand.

Crocodile: She not know your grandmother, Mr. G.

G: True, true.

This is the day when Alice receives new title: LADY CELLARER OF THE TOYAL HOUSEHOLD OF GURDJIEFF—because she takes care of Armagnac bottle. "ONLY WHEN MY LABOR YOU EAT WELL, THEN AM I SATISFIED."

MOMENTUM—INERTIA.

Canary tells at table how Mr. G put her in galoshes about these two words. She did not know they were same thing with only difference of time. I tell her I knew, Alice and I had talked just the other night about this (from some

star book). I say: Momentum—an object sent off moving in a given direction cannot initiate change of direction from within itself—shock must be—must come from outside. This is how I understand momentum.

G listens, then says to me: Since you interest take, one formulation I can tell for you: MOMENTUM IS WHEN YOUR GOING NOT DEPEND FROM YOU.

INERTIA: For instance, he says, Thin One drink my coffee from inertia. Many month she drink it in my house, she takes habit, but she not <u>like</u> coffee. She drink from inertia.

(Another day we are speaking as usual about eating till we bust and I say to him: I am glad your piano not here yet, Mr. G, because then would spoil piano also.

G: this is true. You know, when I bust, whole house go down, all walls, all floor, everything. But when Crocodile bust, all block destroy.)

Margaret looks mystified because we are talking—and laughing—about busting, pianos, house and blocks destroyed, and when someone clears it up for her she laughs.

G: Why you laugh—you have skin ten times thicker than crocodile. If I wish shoot with gun, bullet not go through.

This is the day Margaret's Arch toast is "May you transformate into elephant."

<u>Mar 10, 1937</u>.

There is soup— then chicken, apricots, white grapes, etc.

G: Fast soup. (We're in mi-careme, I think.) (Mid lent).

Crocodile: This is <u>feast</u> soup, Mr. G.

G: No, is fast. ONLY HOW PREPARE MAKE FEAST SOUP.

There is baby mutton.

G: Bravo, England. England two good thing have—mutton and pound sterling. All rest is dirty thing. I remember how everything smell of margarine —in street, in house, people, everything. But English, they not smell it, they have in bones. Germans invent this (margarine) but they not use so much now.

Alice tells him about the material in a collection she saw with God-Save-The-King woven in all-over pattern. The plan is clear to G: Someone here with English connection, plans to put England in galoshes for pounds (house of Molyneux!)—he will take patent on this design and sell high, make all England buy, and England must because they are so partial for their King.

G: English are such, they cannot look on King with impartiality. Such sheep are. Only if Englishmen lie alone, awake, at night, can be sometimes see. But moment he is with one friend, he partial. But WE can now say, not God save the King, but God keep King we not see him. Other king was will-less, but him you could look at; this one must not even be seen. Good conference, Theen One? What English people would think if could hear.

Alice: Would have to mentate long time, Mr. G.

G: They not have time mentate, too much time they take to digest Australian frozen meat—or margarine.

Mar 11, 1937.

G tells us how the old man, Papasha, one of his parasites on whom he lost years of time, suddenly appeared with a banking connection, references, possibility; only two block from café, there all the time—and Papasha takes him over, for 500 francs you can open account, and then they let have as many thousand francs as wish, because they remember G. long time ago, when he was in Kashmiri; he with this bank had business, many thousand sheep he sell them—many thousand this is not tail of donkey—and so now, because they remember him, they trust. All this produced by the old man that morning. YOU NEVER KNOW WHERE FIND WHAT LOST.

His apricot jam dessert is perfect today, he tells us too bad we have not developed taste, there is such thing in this dish that any man with developed taste who eat would lose mind; man can develop taste as can develop hearing for music, knowing every note that makes up the total harmony; man can even develop self so can take poison which would kill others.

Mar 12, 1937.

Alice drinks small glass kraut juice during her hors d'oeuvre course and he tells her not must drink before, drink after, otherwise you spoil appetite. Americans ignorant about food—not ONE thing they know, not even simplest medical knowledge they have. Only one small thing they do shows this—

drinking glass of water before meals. “Body work 24 hours to make liquids necessary to digest food, but before eating they drink water which sucks out all these special liquids, dissolves them and they go off and when food comes nothing there is for it to mix with, nothing for transformate; they eat only to make merde.” Also they eat butter. Butter coats the stomach lining and all the insides and what must pass through the walls cannot pass—they even eat chocolate before meals; chocolate coats inside and takes away all feeling of hunger—this is only for travelers, mountain climbers, etc., to eat—only when they WISH this effect when not can have food. This is why soldiers ate chocolate during war. But Americans eat before meals, such uneducated people they are.

An iodine toast: “Let Devil help Devil take.”

Mar 13, 1937.

He tells the priest something. Priest watches with eyes popping mouth pursed, tossing back his curls. We know something happens. Then G tells: Just now I tell priest God is old man, only I use old Russian formulation for old man. You know this thing used in old days for make writing dry—sand. This is how we tell old man—sand run out and he cannot stop it; moreover any devil can take. This I tell him. He not even angry. On the fruit dish is the same old monster orange we’ve been seeing many days—bright dark orange with rough pebbled skin.

Crocodile: Ah, there is the patriarch still.

G hears, looks amused, and then says: Now you put in me curiosity. (He goes out of room to his store house, returning presently with another monster a little older and darker, the original patriarch. He shows it to us without a word. Then he says to me: You must be careful about such thing you see in my house. Remember my store-house have communication with Karatas.

Mar 16, 1937.

G: Mees Gordon, pity you not know valuum of rice. On earth thousand kind is, but you not know. This is Persian special.

Gordon: I know how good is Mr. G.

G: Not how good. Rice you praise special only for how soft is, yet at some time each grain you can count. When the fruit comes to table canary touches an apple, admiring color.

G: Look how she take interest in exterior, like all representatives art. For exterior she make imagination, fantasies. She even so far go she opposite sex make when present self. Such formulation there is.

G: (to Gordon, asking if she took her iodine.) You had, Mees Gordon?

Gordon: Yes, I have.

G: I not ask if have—I know you have in pocket. I ask if take. We begin discussion about our idiot language, how you must say Have you had, Yes I have had, etc.

Canary: We would say, among ourselves: Did you take your iodine.

G: No, excuse. This you speak with intonation. Your intonation tell all. Your manipulation make understand, not your word. But I not know your intonation, I strange your language. For me only word exist. Exact word.

Gordon: Language changes with the times, Mr. G, we grow careless.

G: Excuse. LIFE MAKE LANGUAGE CHANGE, ONLY LIFE. But now man go ahead and make change before ready go. For example, English have mentation shepherd somewhere they learn Greek, so now when they speak even with fisherman they understand only fifty-fifty. Normal man never try change language. Only life can do this.

As we go out the door Alice says: Now we go to our labors, Mr. G.

ONLY ONE MEASURE THERE IS FOR LABOR: OOF (money). Labor without off onanism.

Mar 17, 1937. Three of us got new toasts:

As compassionate, G says: My dear Canary, God help you transformate into crow. Not so much dirt have; but if not quantity have, if small, quality have. After you are crow, then we will see.

Squirming (to Alice): May God, the Devil and all the people of Karatas help you be not Squirming, that you not be in future what you are today.

Square (to Crocodile): God help you transformate into elephant.

Alice: Ah, longer legs will have.

G: Not only legs, other thing they have long also.

Speaking to Gordon, he brackets-English-Scotch together as one word and Canary admires how cleverly he does this; she did not expect his thought about two separate peoples would go in such sequence.

G: But why astonish? All same is. You know how I call in book that island.

Canary: Albion—from Latin (Alba, meaning white, Roman name because white chalk cliffs.)

G: But excuse, in book I not spell same. One letter I change and you not see. Even many pages before, I prepare for this—when I speak of Khorasan goat, Karabach ass and people of Albion. But you not see.

Canary: Middle part I cannot remember.

G: Middle not important. Only beginning and end important. Middle is only . .

Canary: Bridge?

G: Yes, bridge. Beginning preparation make, and end flow from beginning—bridge not interest. Only for turkey. I HATE TURKEY—I WRITE FOR CROW OR FOR PEACOCK.

Mar 20, 1937. VICHY

There is a table for ten and the patron served boiled eel for fish course.

G: (in a rage magnificent to see): Why you give such thing? This is not fish—is serpent, is merde. Normal man not eat such thing—here we are English, American, this for us is like oyster—only idiot and German eat such.

We all send out our eel untouched. The patron's situation is too awful to go into.

The great exoteric platter of fruit is brought on for dessert. The Vichy Russians look at all the strange fruits and G divides grapefruit, mango, and avocado and watches them eat for the first time.Their marvel over the strange fruit leaves them naked—so, after it is over, he calls the garçon and proceeds to feed him pieces of unknown fruits—and now the Russians are clothed again—in scorn for the garçon and amusement at his marvel over the fruits which they just five minutes before had tasted for the first time.

Mar 21, 1937. Morning of Palm Sunday in Café Gambrinus.

G: We will plan promenade, since Sunday is.

Crocodile: And special Sunday—Palm Sunday.

G Remembers Easter is near and speaks of fasts: We were in Nice beginning of Easter, musted be 40 days ago, Easter fast have 50 days.

Gordon: Always 40 days, Mr. G, Bible tells how Jesus fasted 40 days.

G: Excuse, English Bible is made for old maid, Good phrase? Made for old maid? I not know from your Bible. From old source I know/ Easter fast is seven week, 50 days. Before Christmas is 40 days—then there are two more fasts in the year—one for planting and one for taking (harvest). This custom among all man through all ages. I know from custom, not from your English Bible.

He invites us for coffee in his room "exact fifteen minutes you come" after we get up from the dinner table. We arrive 17 minutes after. He scolds: Late, already late—(and we see the men have already been there and drunk.) He scolds Gordon and I say: My fault, Mr. G, I give time to all.

G: Not to one I speak, small or large—all from same barrel, same stink. I from barrel speak. And now, coffee cold.

Crocodile: Is very good, Mr. G, not cold, just right.

G: This is how YOU like. This you must not tell among many, for you is good, but what is your good is spoil for another. You must enter situation of other—see what is and put word in your mouth to correspond. Even bon-ton book tell this

Next day, Monday. After a great lunch he speak in café about dinner.

G: How be now?

Gordon: Oh nothing, Mr. G.

G: This English property is—answer for present. Tapeworm always answer for present. Man with mind must answer for future. Must see how WILL be, not how is.

At dinner he looks in the mirror at a blond hussy behind him. That blond you know how is. Is liquid. Every part is liquid. Even there is formulation for such. Her woman-ness is same as after 25 glass tea.

After two armagnacs he recalls name of some place which other have been trying to remember for him. G: You see how I remember? After two Armagnacs memory is thin- —thin in quotation marks.

Gordon: Fine, perhaps you mean.

Alice: Precious.

G: Precious exact word is—under pressure. Same sound root have—precious pressure,

Crocodile speaks of diamond, our most precious stone, made under pressure

G: Yes, you see?

Coffee later in his room.

We speak of his hospitality—the coffee, the mountain of fruit.

G: Hospitality, yes. Man not have, in him is atrophied. Hospitality is now only cunningness. Organically man not have. As for example in that place Turkestan. There still exists humanity-ness. From heart. Friend there is when two people buy something together, one sell his part and make money and this he divide with other 50-50. Two times he do this and friendship is established for always. We tell about the men with "language of smile" who came aboard our boat in Constantinople, bound for Mecca—teapot in hand, umbrella in other—how we know instantly something different had come aboard. From Khirgiz steppes they came.

G: Khirgiz yes, also such people they are. Moreover they go to Mecca, to prove that they are holy men, simple people with heart. Those places are centrum of humanity-ness.

Alice: China and Japan also?

G: No, China already merde is—also Japan. Already spoiled. They in process of change from crow to peacock. No longer is crow, not yet is peacock. Merde is.

Often as boy I go to holy places, but was psychopathic then and different thing received. Later I see. Etchmiadzin holy place in Armenia, like Jerusalem. Last time I go I remember how different it was—all changed. People, faces, all. All go so fast now, not have time assimilate. In last 50 years, customs of 1000 years go. WHAT TAKE LONG TIME COME, LONG TIME

STAY: SHORT TIME COME, QUICKLY PASS. Now even small boy there read newspaper, you can imagine what idea he receives.

We talk of going to these places.

G: Wait two, three years, Mees Gordon, then can go by airplane.

Alice: Then nothing will see. I wish go by train.

G: Even in train, nothing see. Must go on foot. Once in Russia, just before I came here, that not so long ago, I lived like gypsy. I have horse, donkey, tent, friends—I make twenty-thirty kilometers one day, stop and rest two, three days. Such travel only is real. THEN YOU KNOW HOW IS—YOU KNOW IF EACH PLACE HAVE TWO OR THREE STONES, EVERYTHING YOU SEE. If you could go Paris- Turkestan this, then COMPLETE EDUCATION you would receive. Moreover, long time you stay among such people, gradually you become like them, like real man. You take on their habit and become like them. This I know.

Travel… this I tell for astonish you. Once I three hundred kilometers go on goat—of course special goat, special training have. I travel over the Pamirs to Kashmir. Never is such animal for difficult places like goat. Donkey next. DONKEY YOU KNOW SPECIAL PSYCHE HAVE—IF NOT WISH GO, HE WILL DIE FIRST. You can beat, you can kill, if not wish—NOT. But if you understand psyche of donkey, if you are friend with—THEN HE WILL TAKE FROM YOU ALL HEAVINESS AND GO UNTIL HE DIE. Only, no English can understand psyche donkey, never can make do. In general, people think is stupid animal, but in reality is most intelligent. You must know his psyche—then he will not be for you like hysterical woman, five Fridays in week. OH MANY FRIEND HAVE I AMONG DONKEYS.

He puts his last 50 francs in his coin purse, explaining it will grow more money. It is a culture—what makes grow yogurt? he asks. He won't understand culture—the nearest we can come to it is yeast.

G: Yeast—yes this can be. Make bread rise. Also (this in perfect seriousness seemingly) this is from where you get name for this holiday—Easter. Reality it come from Yeaster. Christ rise this day. Yeast he must had, like bread. Same root. (Eastre was Anglo-Saxon for Goddess of Spring-S.S.)

At last lunch he sends candy over to a little girl who receives it with a jump of joy and rubs her feet together.

G: Look she make play with candy, as if is poupee. You know, Russian word for navel is 'poop'- -and French for doll poupee—from same root come. I could for half hour with this word poop make very dirty thing, and then for half

hour make clean with poupee. But she must not know this relation because she already spoiled is. Such children must not play with doll because dirty thing they receive.

Mar 26, 1937.

We have small tinned lambs' tongues—from Tibet—from Lhassa, and he tells how he used to have to butter his whole body, then cover with rubber underdrawers (made in Germany), then over all about six inches thickness of fur garments—and even then he was cold in Tibet—only part of body have satisfactions was face under hood, warmed by breath. Such cold you never can imagine. Also-such smell from 'booter' after many week! One other very cold place he stayed for whole winter was in the Pamirs. There live under snow—have houses under snow and even tunnel connecting each house like streets—and so cold was that when you lit fire, the solid snow ceiling melted just an instant, then froze over immediately.

This night also we drink Dalai Lama's tea—he hovers over the pot and pours out the small cups himself, measuring sugar first, telling us how to drink: Too bad I not have time make Tibetan tea—with butter boiled, and small amount of flour or roasted wheat. Such a drink have ALL (However this tea we drink is sublime and we say so).

G: You see, not such idiot there in Tibet. There you can find everything if you know how; Tibet direction communication with Karatas has. He tells us of the wood they burned in their Pamir under-snow houses—there was one black wood and one white.

Crocodile: Birch—what our Indians use for canoes—the skin of the birch, birchbark.

He goes to look up word in his Russian dictionary because is sure not birch is in Europe, certainly not in England where Gordon claims to have seen. He finds birch is right. Tells how they made shoes from the 'skin' of it.

Mar 25, 1937. (This passage omitted on page 72?).

G: (to Jane when strange fruit comes to table) Such thing, Mees Geep, not from planet earth. This is food for Man—real man—not man in quotation marks. Nature hate man in quotation marks you know—for "man" Nature not

give such thing. Cookies—also for real men is. If you are such, can have all the time. Here is quintessence of all good what exist.

Alice's toast: Squirming. Soon you must change. SQUIRMING ONLY IS PASSING STATE FOR MAN. Is state like fish out of sea—man must not stay long—or man die or obliged be born again. Man can stay squirming two, three months but not for a year.

Mar 30, 1937. Jane, Gordon, Sardine, Crocodile and Alice.

First half of lunch eaten in silence. Allow as Cellaresss refills my glass—he thinks I am drinking false until I tell that I begin from new—then he looks at other glasses not full as mine. Gordon hid hers—he finds—and turns to Alice: Theen One, your obligation you not fulfill. You not see all around you, only ones near like me, Miss Geep, Crocodile. This is small obligation I give you but you not fulfill. If cannot do this, then all you do will be false… even hat. YOU MUST FEEL YOUR SUBJECTS AROUND YOU—YOU FOR THEM MUST BE KING. King with all his objects—house, people, checkbook even. Yet even all this is cheap thing beside real man. One man without quotation marks is worth all your kings with all the objects. We have Compassionate toast before soup.

G: Compassionate (Canary) not here. She in Turkish bath. She exterior dirt has made clean, but never interior dirt will she make clean, such dirtiness is. Never if go every day to bath, never if use 10 kilo soap, will she make clean, such interior dirtiness have. Still she in dirty surrounding stay. We begin the soup.

G: Crocodile, who not eat …

C: Perishes like dog.

G: Yes, and like dirty dog. Two kind of dog there is, you know, dirty dog and dirty dog. You understand, Mees Gordon, what difference is?

Squirming toast: G: I wish with all my presence, with my real soul, you soon transformate from Squirming to some other Idiot. Let all devils help you.

Square Idiot. G: May you be useful—in near future—-my service—for all humanity.

This has been a terrible and grave luncheon, and he in some kind of pitying sudden rage—about us, I feel sure—and his disappointment. All the time I felt tears and Jane said afterwards: Today he is sorrowing with our

common Father, it's because of us, we haven't been able to take enough of what he gives, we've failed him somewhere.

AMERICAN NOTES.

Never on earth can you see such place like Chicago, such dirty thing they do there. Such vibration have. But even so, Washington is more dirty. Washington is centrum source for evil. American mentation is such that when a man speak of money, ten thousand dollar is nothing, fifty thousand dollar is nothing, yet he with his whole family will pray for one thousand dollar—to own just one thousand dollar is chief dream and aim of his whole life. But in his mentation, when he speak, he cannot even recognize one thousand dollars. He speak of fifty thousand, one hundred thousand—even million—anything else is merde for him. Such mentation have American—never he middle can see. Or fly, or elephant—nothing in between.

G: I hope with my whole heart that beginning tonight there will arise in all of you feeling of humanity. You know, I not wish offend; but man is such, especially English, American, that he cannot feel for even ONE person outside himself, so spoiled is he, so degenerate. This I have proved, many years I make study and experiment on psyche of man—this I know for fact. Never on earth is such degenerate people as English for feeling of humanity. Americans also. Even your Negro is not so degenerate—he have twice times more feeling for humanity than you Americans—Negros I like, can be friend with, he is not so spoiled, so degenerate.

April 1937

Apr 9, 1937.

I, with elan, give the Squirming toast, skipping Compassionate completely. I apologize to Canary and give her toast, Compassionate.

G: Look how she waste time. Fifteen minute she think about what next come, then with great swagger she say wrong. Fifteen minute she make plan, even for swagger. (Then he looks at me and says): Truth, truth. . (But withholds the djopa)—then after a moment says: THE TERRIBLENESS OF IT IS THAT

MAN—REAL MAN—MUST REMEMBER, IF NOT HIMSELF THEN WHAT HE DO IN RELATION TO HIS SURROUNDINGS. Man must always prepare for what he do—necessary at all time he think what he do.

Alice suggests yogurt to Lola who says "No thanks" and makes a don't-like shrug. A little later, when there seems no connection, G says: Now I remember one Old Persian saying. Something Theen One does make me remember. FROM WHERE COULD DONKEY LEARN TASTE OF ANANAS (pineapple).

Once he roars at Lola. He urges sweets upon her which she has no place for. She says to him that it is against her regime, given by him; does he not remember?

G: How can I remember? You are only one; when I am in this room I think only of eating-ness, here I cannot think of you as one. There, in other room, I think of doctor thing. In salon—discussion, music. In each room I am different man, Here in dining room I interest only in eating-ness, not your individual.

G has had mint tea made especially for Lola who cannot drink coffee today. She drinks to the last drop, obviously appreciative, so he says, to rag her: "C'est pas mauvais, Madame?"

Lola (to be witty) says : Oui, c'est mauvais, tres mauvais.

G turns to us: Look, how she is not gentille. I ask, like domestique, Is it good, Madame? And she reply, it is merde. She call result my labor such word. The burst of horror from Lola sends him on: "Oui, Monsieur (he says) c'est merde.

The fruit. G to Lola: Madame, eat, mangez.

Lola: I can't.

G: Eat, eat. (He puts fruit on her plate). You see even how I beg you eat. You know, in Persia, how they ask you to eat? This I will tell is quite bon-ton there. They say: Madame, eat, eat, this cost only merde. Such understanding they have, no one stop on this word, with shock, like English, French. Even is what they wish give cost a million, they say cost only merde. Very bon-ton there, this word. Always they use, for everything. He see me staring (with joy) and says to Canary: Look how crocodile look at me. We discuss grammatical question, Crocodile.

Crocodile: Grammatical question in quotation marks.

G: Excuse, this time is only grammatical question. This is exception. All other times, all what you hear here is in quotation marks, as your understanding receive it. But this time, not in quotation marks. This is first time you are worthy to hear grammatical question discussed.

He tips and half spills his coffee and says immediately, of Alice: Look she make Black magic, she do this, not I. She is…

We say: Witch.

G: Yes, she is witch. Her witch-ness have. You can see it in her nose. Always you must look on nose to know about witch-ness. Also Sardine have—only not so much as Theen One. First at this table for witch-ness is Theen One, second Sardine. (He turns toward Alice): Any man when see such face, he immediately association have for witch-ness, all he remember from child comes to him by association. (He makes a stooped magician gesture). Only she not have Harmony, because too much one thing she have. Six parts her are empty, one part have too much, this is why her witch-ness not have Harmony.

April 10, 1937. Lunch.

He catches Alice watering her Armagnac. He sees her blush. He says: Look now she begin have one property of Mees Gordon.

Comes Square Idiot toast, mine, and he explains to Lola: Round Idiot is Idiot from all sides (he squares the air) here, here, here, and here he make stop, not all times idiot.(Something left out here—he must surely have used the word "Square" someplace, also. FP)

He notices Alice did not finish her glass on my toast and chides her thus: Look, you not drink all, and moreover for your friend. Now one thing I know about you and Crocodile – you unconscious animosity must have one for the other. Even with such Scotch drink you not finish. Scotch, not Jewish. You know, Scotch is concerning material thing. Scotchness is organic thing. Jewishness is psychological thing. Scotch I hate physically, but Jewish I hate more because he psychic dirt have—self-love, vanity, pride. Except for this I like Jewish, I like for friend. Only he is dirty in objective sense, because he had possibility for know-ing. Scotch not dirty in objective sense, he is not guilty. Jewish is born with possibility for knowing—so he is guilty.

I: Now we understand.

G: Of course. Such separation I must make for mentation. This is why I always tell: of Scotch or Jewish—two quite different things these are. This is why Scotchness have stink and Jewishness have stench.

INSERT: At beginning of lunch Canary, with chicken grease on hands, gets to go and wash and says: Excuse me please, Mr G.

G: (after she is out of room) : Always I excuse, for everything man do I excuse. (I see a look of unimaginable gentleness on his face). Then he adds: I am always bon-ton. Always I excuse.

Gordon (who perhaps saw same look): But with arrière pensée, Mr. G.

I say: Behind-thought.

G: No, better untor-thought. This is not behind but under. Tell Canary when she come in. Canary, while you out we find new word—unter-thought. This is a good phrase? From this you can write whole article. I excuse but not tell my unter-thought.

He goes on, telling how polite he is. MY POLITNESS WAS BORN IN ME. (Hearing such phrase from himself he stops with astonishment like ours) Good phrase I tell!

April 12, 1937.

He asks Alice if she will have a second helping (of a fourth course!) Alice, alarmed: Oh no thank you, Mr.G I have no place for it.

G: Look how she is egoist. (i.e puts his hand level with his chin).You speak from here up, you not speak for tapeworm. TAPEWORM IS IN YOUR PRESENCE, you must not make angry, you must try with him be indulgent. WHO BE KIND TO TAPEWORM, WHO SATISFY, TAPEWORM HELP HIM ACHIEVE WHAT HE WISH.

Later Gordon is telling him something I forget, and uses a fuzzy word which she tries to explain, says "I think" and then says something about English words analogous to thinking.

G: You have think, ponder, meditate—but not this word (which he gives in Russian) which means mentation. MENTATION MEANS EXACT—DIVIDE, TAKE AND NOT TAKE.

Apr 22, 1937.

He explains the two Hopelessnesses to Georgie (Georgette?)

G: Objective Hopeless, he is merde. Subjective Hopeless, he have possibility be not merde—he already come into place where calls self hopeless, realized his nonentity. HE possibility have. Every man have moment when he imagine what he can be God—hopeless all, but two kinds hopeless. EVERYBODY IMAGINE HE HAVE KNOWING-NESS FOR LIFE, BUT FOR THIS KNOWINGNESS HE IS NONENTITY. LIFE IS BIG THING.WHAT HE HAVE IS ONE SMALL PIECE.

Before lunch—Alice is speaking with him, tells that I am upset, having realized that day that the separation will be nearly six months. He says to me: We not be separate as long as with inside same idea have. This going not will touch your inner world. We are together. Soon again we will meet.

About newspaper article: I FROM NOTHING, NOTHING CAN TAKE. NORMAL MAN CANNOT TAKE WHERE IS NOTHING. PSYCHOLOGICAL MAN CAN TAKE—WITH IMAGINATION HE SEE SOMETHING WHERE IS NOTHING.

He excoriates newspaper articles and people who write them: They are nothing but words used to cover their nothingness. This is fault of your language, because no meaning have in its roots, like Greek; even Russian which comes from Greek have more meaning than language in Europe which make themselves on dirty Latin. No meaning in roots, so no meaning in words. THAT IS WHY LIFE IS SUCH EMPTY THING.

You wish rice, Canary, then I will give independent.

Canary: Yes, rice I like best.

G: Practique show that men who eat rice in thise (rice) countries take force only for working like donkey with body, but for man's mentation he must green things eat—vegetables, for making active his mind.

G: Small thing can be big thing; all big things come from small thing.

G: Fat never depend from what you eat, quite another reason is. When you make inner effort for your exterior body exercise, this effort blends with chemicals I give you, and both together make yet another new chemistry (created by your will).

Vichy Apr 23, 24, 25, 1937.

We start after 6 pm on Saturday in car loaded with his Easter gifts—first for the Fontainebleau family, then the Moralines of Vichy. Alice and I are jammed in back with sack of tinned goods. He doesn't speak until we are rolling over the hayfields just before Fontainebleau—the vivid green at sunset. He looks back and says: Summer green: Coffee in Fontainebleau—then on for Nevers, for the night. Bright full moon, the most gorgeous night ride. We pass a frog pond—the car is creaking and the frogs are croaking and the croaking wins out on the instant we pass.

G (with joy in voice): You heard? Oh, this is noise I very much like. A rabbit runs across the road—Oi-Oi! Then another hour of moonlight silence till we come to his lookout over the Loire at La Charitée. G: Even here we can stop, we not need broken our custom. He gets out to walk along the moonlit path—we hear all the night birds and when he returns to car I say: Never have I heard so many birds singing at night, Mr G.

G: Of course, is just season. EVERYTHING LIVE.

Night in Nevers—midnight supper in his room. Paté de canard de Rouen! Morning we start early."So clean is air." He speaks about the Fontainebleau family, where last night he passed out big bank notes and a sack of food and a suckling pig.

Alice: Now I begin understand, Mr G, what satisfaction you must have

G: Not necessary philosophize so. THEY EMANATION, VIBRATION, GO OUT—THIS TOTAL GO ON YOU—INDIRECT FOOD IS THIS FOR YOU. Even now this expression come to me from your Bible, is early Christian word—indirect food. If I not be happy, I can be made so. If people around me happy, then I can be. In indirectness, mechanically, it such force show. It come to you without your consciousness. UN-direct. Crocodile this will interest you. Same thing also can be about sin—un-direct sin, un-voluntary. So this indirect food. Same thing also can be voluntary—you thing —you make consciously.

Alice tells about Aimee Semple McPherson—her orchestra, her stage, her full-moon backdrops and colored lights.

G: This show how people are hungry for something more. Every year on earth there appear such—last year was one in Russia. This is not bad thing, you know—even with such misunderstanding is better thing than your fox-trot and cocktail. Not matter how little have, is not bad thing. Already it have some reality for people. Is not masturbation thing like foxtrot. We have dinners for

ten, twelve, processions of hors d'oeuvre, of trout. Once I offer him carrots, a mound of baked ones on a symphony platter of vegetables.

G: Carrot I never eat. You know, YELLOW IS DANGEROUS COLOR —you even have this understanding about Orient. Never I eat, or roasted or boiled, because we not know totality of what transforms when yellow you cook. Only fresh can eat. And so I advise you, Mees.

Now tapeworm is glad—HE FEEL SURE NOT WHAT HE WILL HAVE FOR THE BODY ALL SENSING.

Café Gambrinus: Our big talk.

Already you decide go out from averageness. "We speak of impossibility of turning back. He speaks for 20 minutes—then tells us to spend the rest of day and all the next thinking only of what he has said. Even if you TOO MUCH spend for this, no matter. Later you can rest. But now must put ALL aside and concentrate only on this what I just now tell.

A pause for rest, then he laughs to self: One association just go—automatically—in my brain.You know, this is FIRST TIME ON EARTH such thing is told in such place. This has been told, but in one year's time—and with big preparation—prayer, fast, even enema make before. Also special costume. Here in 20 minutes, in such dirty place, we have told.

May 1937

May 3,1937. G (at table):

I am very glad they (Alice and I) in last days here went to Russian church, participants in such good thing. For feeling experience. He tells how all Christian services derive from the Greek: Once in Jerusalem I see nine different kinds Christian all together in one place for Christmas—in center was Greek, on right was this old people. Italy war with—Abyssinia. I very partial watch all and I see that only the Greek was real thing, and this I not tell because I am Greek.When you see this Greek Christmas—THIS OPEN UP ALL YOUR FEELING, you forget why is, for who, you forget even Christ—such knowledge they have for compose ceremony—for psychology of people.

Alice: Was Bible also taken from Greek?

G: Of course.Everything Christian came from real old Greek, then they spoil. ALL, ALL, come from Greek. Even from before time when was Bible.Your Bible is NEW BOOK—composed 400, 500 years after by fishermen.This was how fishermen saw. Fisherman today are exact same as was then, you know fishermen, what understanding have.

Alice: But before fisherman, Mr G, what happened to Knowledge? G: Was with initiate people. All go in one stream, you remember initiatism—still today flows that stream. You see, you ask question from one stream, I answer from other, then you go back to your stream with answer, and so on. You remember the two streams I write about?Difference in two streams IS THE DIFFERENCE BETWEEN INTERPRETATION OF EVENTS ON EARTH. One make elephant from fly, one make fly from elephant. Events have two explanations—one for mankind, one for me. My stream is initiatism. You know that is in hypnotism—with that you can make water of wine for some people, for others you can make wine of water. I tell about my stream. What happen before, as you ask, not interest me—remember my chapter on Maralplecie—also Konuzion and poppy seeds. This is what happened before.

Gordon: But there have been messengers, Mr. G, like you.

G: Many such messengers there are, even you have in America. For English and Americans they are something, but for me they are merde in objective sense.

"Let now be your left-shouldered angel."

"Not one time you will do, not 100 times you will do, but one thousand and one times you do and something will happen."

Now is imagination, but early late will be FACT"

YOUR LAW-ABLE ANIMAL.

Section 2

Notes by Solita Solano (and Kathryn Hulme)

October 1935 through February 1938

With Mr. G.

These are greatly abridged, but contain his most important teaching, sayings and examples of his incomparable sense of humor.

October 1935

Oct. 19, 1935.

K., L., and I went to the café tonight. He said, "You very much changed – if before worth one hundred dollars, now worth thousand." He took us to his Ecrivisse restaurant for dinner and when he gave the toasts, he called in the patron and the cook to drink with him, and the waiter too. He said to L, "Never mind idiot doctors, drink, good for you." When he said to me, "Drink, drink," I emptied my glass. He said, "No, no. Woman must only drink half glass for toasting. All she wants, but in half glasses. Now you not drink next toast." He said Katie and I had "Jewish" psyche; I was "Jewish" and canary combination and Katie was "Jewish" and crocodile combination. (Three years later, he said suddenly one day, "Kanari, you remember what I first tell you about Jewish and canary? Well, now you are just canary. You astonished my memory, I see your face. Many things I forget, but not such thing.") To Louise he said, "You are Sardine and wart. You know how Sardine struggle to get back in water when left between sea and sand? "Louise asked, "but what is wart?" He would not reply except to say "I once knew priest who prayed for one." (A year later he explained that "wart" was not the right word; he had meant "carbuncle.") Later at the Café he said, "I now am old idiot; both feet in galosh, moreover old Jewish." "I need now some church mouse again." "Wednesday I take you and Sardine to Fontainebleau and we can read book on the train and see machine for music."

Oct. 23, 1935.

Last night he came to my hotel with book and we read aloud to him in K's room until 2 A.M. This morning we met him in Café and waited while he read some proofs, then took train to Fontainebleau. Read all the way in his book. He took us to his brother's little house and showed us the machine. It looks like a radio. Beside it is a rod that emits moans, music, buzzing or shrieks according to who has approached; its tone changes for each person's vibrations. His invention. Lunch and the idiot toasts. He is angry if one doesn't remember the sequence of idiots. He's been mad at Krocodile a lot, but not with Sardine. She said the right ones once and he said, "I am astonished." (I had written them down and learned them as a precautionary measure.) We read book again, took the 4 P.M. train back, fetched him later at the Café for dinner. No one had money for the Ecrivisse, so we went to small Greek restaurant near my hotel. G. spoke Turkish to a man at next table and Greek to the patron. Said he knew 48 languages well and 20 more as well as he knows English. He said he is planning a group here and that we three are to start it. He said, "You are very dirty but have something very good – many people not got – very special." When I began to cry, he said, "Must not cry." I said, "but I MUST." He said, "Must – but must not." He made a tirade against A. Once he laughed at me and said, "You have a screw loose." We returned to hotel and read again until midnight. Janet came downstairs from our rooms. I introduced her – "Old friend, we live here ten years." He said, "Oh, sometimes such friendships very bad, great hate come out, then love, then more hate." When I said, "I'm too old to begin this work – it's too late, "he replied, "Never too late, but now it is twice as hard." When was it he said, in the Café, "The only difference between me and other men is that I know more." Another time – "I am small man compared to those who sent me."

October 26, 1935.

Another session last night. I walked alone with him from restaurant to the hotel. He said, "You wonder why I so good to you?" "Yes. Why?" "I not tell you yet," and smiled under the electric light. Is it bad for you that I am good to you?" I said, "No, I am sure not," he said, "I think so too." In the restaurant he said to me, "You are lopsided," and twice when he offered the others a drink, he said to me – "Except you. You cannot have this time." He said, "I see all your quintessence." To see him every night is a miracle. During the reading he said, "Ah, human nature. You give something to someone. First time he prostrates himself, second time he kisses your hand, third time he gets

familiar, fourth time he merely nods at you, fifth time he insults you because not enough what you give, and in the end, he sues you."

Oct. 28, 1935.

Dirty, also means the result of mixed bloods, he says. Scotch very dirty. Irish very dirty, Spanish worse than Italian; mixed blood gives less chance for individuality. He illustrated this with Jews; never straight, always German Jew, Armenian Jew, Spanish Jew, French Jew. He doesn't like altruist or egotists, but didn't say what he did like. Says he always knows what a person is thinking and feeling by the way their muscles are "composed." He said, "My mind not squeamish but my body very squeamish." Yesterday, Sunday, he telephoned us to meet him at Coupole. He shopped for our lunch, bought caviar, vodka, Russian cold foods, and we all lunched in K's room at the hotel. Afterword we read for hours. At night we met him at the Ecrivisse where he spent 300 francs for dinner and two bottles of Armagnac. He scolded K. and me and Louise for treating her dog like a human being.

Oct. 29, 1935.

At dinner I had a misfortune – no good fortune – to ask a "mental" question. Thunderbolts fell. "Now you know your illness, your sickness. It is curiosity – American curiosity. Always you want to know more and more without understanding what already I have said to you. For that you will die MERDE. Tears from me, of course. He asked, "You angry?" I said, "No, it's true." When he left, he said, "Tonight you were bitten by your flea. You be careful not to catch more fleas or you cannot sleep in your bed." Back at the hotel; he talked to Miss Gordon, who came for the first time to the reading. He told her she had not much time left, it was now or never. She must do something special now. "If you do not, merde you have been, merde you are and merde you will perish, like dog." He said to us, "Miss Gordon will be like Mother Superior for you and you must treat her as such.

Now all listen carefully to what I tell. Here is special exercise, first of seven, and tomorrow Miss Gordon must bring me seven questions about this. Think of legs and try to imagine emanations that flow from them. Then try to think you are holding then back so they will not escape. Now I advise you not sleep all night but think about this, then I will tell you more. Now Miss Gordon, by telling this I have made myself an obligation to you and I must be your slave, at your service any moment you command me. But if you not do, I have an obligation to stop." Poor Gordon was rigid with fear. Then he talked

about emanation of all our bodies. He said, "We emanate. This is an active function; a dirty process as dirty as making merde. But sometimes there can be something else but dirt in emanations." I was waiting to hear what, and he looked at me and said, "No, that I not tell." He went on. "The earth emanates. The atmosphere around the planet is its emanation." Again, he looked at me, hanging breathless in midair, and said, "Many more things like this I know but can never tell." He says that curiosity about all this unknown knowledge "stinks." To E.C. whom K. brought to dinner, he said, "Two things I like about you – three things I hate." He said, at the table, "Sometimes God is unique merde."

Oct 31, 1935.

Miss G. asked about exercise, "Where must center of gravity lie, in mind or in leg?" she came to a stop and wished to know why. He said, "Because too much mind; instead must have attention, association of mind with association of feeling. Memory plus sensing makes attention. But feeling has two centers – solar plexus feeling plus spinal brain. Must not philosophize about it but do with faith like a monk. Not try to know with the head, but SURE-ING." She asked, "How long should I do this exercise?" He said, "One-third of waking state must be active – for active mentation or for making real "I" function. One-third active, one-third actively relaxed, one-third automatic living. Have 3 hours you know will be free, do the exercise one hour. Man has three worlds, the world of impressions which is the outer world, the inner world which is the totality of organ functioning, and the world of the soul which ancients called The World of Man. The leg exercise is for the mentation of the inner world. Just as the physical presence of man can arise, so can the soul world of man arise. Between the physical world of man and the soul world there is an intermediate state. (I believe that here he mentioned the astral body, but I did not understand him.) "Miss Gordon, you first do this exercise when not in ordinary life, later you can do anywhere. When man begins to accumulate these emanations, he finds there is a place in him waiting for them, like the place in a motor where power accumulates. When you accumulate emanations, they will crystallize and you will have a force that does not pass from you like water." He said to L., "You are psychic weak." To K. "You are like cow who comes home at night and stares at a new painted barn door. Not know home because just was painted." To me: "I have thought of seven things about you and one I tell now. You have eye of suffering wolf. Only eye, very special thing. I have seen wolf, female wolf, attacked by herd, hungry, tired, bitten; in agony they turn look on me, like look in your eye."

November 1935

Nov. 1, 1935.

He telephoned at 6 to say he would come at 9:30. We all were so depleted that no one could hold herself in her chair. Nevertheless, we read until 3 A.M. mostly K., as she is the best reader. The strain was unendurable. He watched us as never before and the room was charged with his dynamo and our super-effort. Tonight, we dined at the Greek restaurant and read until 2 A.M. K. brought F.S. to dinner and the hotel. When G. saw her, he called for the chicken soup chapter.

Nov. 2, 1935.

At dinner tonight he said to me, "I think on you today. This evening is for you – you are the hero of the evening. I bring special chapter for you." (It was the one on Time.) When he heard L. was sailing, he said, "Now I think you are spoiled for American company." He again scolded her for attention to dog and inattention to him. He said morning sun is best for us, the only time of day when the rays contain certain properties necessary for our understanding. He said, the stronger physically a man is, the weaker his brain; that E. and F. are too tall for good brain; if women have very long hair that also means very short brain. Donkey is stronger than horse because donkey is more stupid.

Nov. 6, 1935.

Last night we read from 8:30 to 3AM without a break. He said he planned to write on for two months, finish last book then start classes. After that we can never see him alone, only from a distance; how we were with him now, is accident. Reading Second Series now, the portraits.

Nov. 9, 1835.

Tonight, he came an hour early, just as I was going out to join the others at dinner. So I had none. He talked with me about my personal problems until the first steps arrived. It was F. He said, "Oh, it is Mees-understanding." "What?" "Mees-Premature, like seven months' baby." She looked angry. He said, "You are hopeless, you are empty and always will be; you have no brain, no possibilities of being." During the reading he said, I can pronounce 400

consonants for your 36. Sound producing organs in man are more important than his eyes. Americans worst nation for sound-producing.''

Nov. 14, 1935.

Sitting with him in Café de la Paix, he said, 'I make a special program now for you. You badly organized - too much here, too little there, one place empty, good physical, fourth center wrong. First will give you piqûres, then initiate exercise for which you must take vow. On what you choose take vow. 'What is most important for you?'' "My eyes, Mr. G.'' "Then let be so. Kanari, would you believe could exist such type man who would give eyes before his arms or legs? Yet it is so.'' Later E. came with K. He said to E., "You have zero attention. For ones like you with such dirty life, exists special kind of hell.'' H e described it. All souls there must sit in a lake of merde up to their mouths. They must sit very still, for at the very slightest movement, the liquid goes into their mouths. Whenever a newcomer approaches, all the souls call out, "Get in gently, please be slow and careful." Once a year to commemorate Jesus Christ, a great stone is thrown into the lake and all the souls receive the liquid in their mouths. E. was very angry and left the café. He said he had just finished his book and that he wished to celebrate tonight. "After tonight I drink no more.''

Nov. 16, 1935.

I went to him at noon for my first piqûre and my first exercise. In the evening when I saw him, he asked how many times I had forgotten. At my reply he said, "If so hot at first, again later will be cold.''

Nov. 20, 1935.

Fourth piqûre today. Last night A. gave us dinner at the Ecrivisse restaurant and Gordon came. She said suspiciously, "Have you been seeing Mr.G?" I said,"Yes - everyday, sometimes twice a day. "She turned red and said to me, "That's a lie!" I did not answer. A. said, "Yes - today we've been with him since noon. During dinner he reproached me for not knowing a Greek root he wanted and Miss G. was pleased! He has found a new apartment, rue Labie, number 11.

Nov. 24, 1935.

We now go to lunch every day in his apt. He cooks the food himself and we each put 15 francs in the kitchen box (except Miss G.) and K. washes the dishes. He calls her "kitchen boy"'- "I like such kitchen boy, he not make me nervous. I set the table and wait on him. Finished first 7 piqûres - now a "pause" before next series.

Nov. 25, 1935.

Had luncheon alone with him. He said, "Exercise I gave you is to instill in you a new kind of data you will need for what is to come later." He gave me the Good and Evil chapter to read - first to myself, then to the others, then to read again alone. I asked him was it true that once man had tail in which was continuation of denying brain? (I had thought of this in the night.) He said yes.

December 1935

Dec. 2, 1935.

All day and evening with Mr. G. After we had read again the Good and Evil chapter, he said men have never seen angels in the world but always thought they had seen devils. The more "good" men thought they were, the more devils they could see -they see devils where a really good man does not. He said the only devil in us is self-calming. I dare not ask "curiosity" questions, so I asked E. to ask him, "Is man the result of evolution from animals?" He replied, "No - man is a different formula." Miss G. was there for lunch. She is friendly to me now. He stopped drinking three days ago - says he cut off everything: Armagnac, Calvados, vodka. No more nightly readings. I am the only one who goes twice a day.

Dec. 3, 1935.

He is in black moods and money difficulties. I waited in vain at Café last night and dined with Miss G. He said he would give her piqûres also.

Dec. 6, 1935.

I had the idea of learning Russian yesterday and today G. was very angry. “Idiot, you waste time idiot language while I your future prepare. You already late your future, now this important time and you must idiot language learn. Svolosh! At lunch he said, “I know you give me all your heart. Soon you must decide if all give up in world.’’ Another kind of piqûre today. Look better. Am better.

Dec. 18, 1935.

Have gone every day, twice a day. Today I told him I must go to London for an article. “How long?’’ “Five days”. “Well, three days all right, but I must know exactly when you go and when you return.’’

Dec. 28, 1935.

Happy to see you again Mr. G.’’ “Ach, happy must not be. Happy is pschopathic. “Another series of piqûres, then another special diet for “quality blood” and second exercise. “You psychopathia much better.’’ He said never say, “in the world’’ that he is teacher, I pupil. “I used also to be idiot, but finished when my accident was. Now I writer and you reader. If I special thing do for you, you not speak.’’ In the café he said to K., “I have made over one-seventh of Kanari’s seven parts - the rest will proceed automatically.’’

When we were alone, he began to explain my new exercise. I was listening with all my being. Suddenly he stopped. Then he said, “The way you receive my instructions is with very bad expression. People who are watching us would think I am telling you something quite else. There are spies for me everywhere. You must always keep your inner world for yourself alone. This is a serious matter for you. There is no correspondence between your exterior and interior. Lucky for you I can read your interior or I would not be able to judge you. Often you have not corresponding expression of your inner life. The world cannot always judge you correctly. Sometimes when even a good effort at understanding you make; you have quite idiotic expression. But I see because I have knowledge of these things. You must always watch yourself, always remember yourself. You are a bad case of lop-sided. Always you have been for mind and nothing you find for understanding, because that is quite another thing and for that you must have teacher - but not in your idiot American sense.”

He sat in silence and I feared he might not give me my exercise. Finally, he explained it. I must do it three hours a day. "And remember yourself before the world. They must nothing see." "Why have I no correspondence Mr. G." "Heredity and bad education." "Why do now menstruate so frequently?" "Quite natural. Piqûres change all processes, that one too. Now adjustments necessary in all organs. Now you not try to think. You must catch up to your thinking, your mentation will come later when I have given you data for understanding."

January 1936

Jan 7, 1936.

Sat in a café alone with him. K. and A. were in further room. He said he would not see them, they were not "serious." He asked me why I had been crying "Afraid to tell you-you will say again I am psychopathic." "No, no, tell me." "Today is anniversary of my mother's death and I always have guilt and remorse about her." "How long ago she die?" "Fourteen years." "Then not psychopathic. Very good thing. Mother very important - you get fire from mother. But not think about her only once a year. But think often." He asked about exercise, I said I couldn't manage it very well, it made me sleepy. He waved his arms and said. "You must struggle, struggle all the time. This exercise is very important. Your whole future depends from this. It should be even more for you than God. Even get angry, if necessary. Every day struggle little by little make data and from this data your future depends. You must think of yourself as a baby you take care of and lead by hand. After you do, necessary you rest twice as long as you have done exercise. Be passive afterwards. "I asked if that meant sitting still or could I do my work on the typewriter?" He laughed. "Oh yes. You passive then. You well asleep then." There was much more, but can't remember. He said to Miss X: ''You not have brain. Brain very important to have in head and not manure"

Jan 12, 1936

He invited A. and K. and Miss G. to lunch today. We read three chapters. He said to me, "You always have a purpose and you are always looking for something unusual or wonderful. I think after you go water closet you look in to see if by chance there is something wonderful."

Jan 13, 1936. (His birthday)

He has begun to talk to us like a teacher. He sat on his big divan cross-legged, we sitting like a class before him. Today he talked for an hour and a half, continuously, "the search for a soul." I remember but a fraction as follows. (My habit was to rush out to the café across the street everyday and write down everything while still fresh in my mind. K. also, when she was in Paris, did the same. We then would combine our recollections and establish sequences.)

"You have heard my horse and cart representation; I will make another to represent man. This one in his search for a soul.

"Man, in his history has always believed he had a soul and sought for. This is the aim of all religions. If in ordinary life I were asked if a man has a soul, I would say, NO, because in general, man has not. Before man can have a soul, he must have an 'I'. Only when he achieves an 'I' can he develop a soul. There are four ways. Let us compare ordinary man with a three-room apartment. The dining-room will represent his organism, his moving center, the place where he eats and attends to the needs of the body's maintenance and development. The drawing room represents his feeling center and the bedroom is his mental center. But this apartment lacks a bathroom, which we will call the 'I' room. In man's ordinary three-room apartment there is disorder. The roof leaks in the dining-room or there is no floor in the drawing room or the window panes are broken in the bedroom. Nothing has been washed or painted or repaired. Perhaps only one room is furnished. Or the articles of furniture that belong in the bedroom are scattered about the dining-room or are on the table in the drawing-room. The building itself may be in the slums.

"Man has tried three ways to find the soul. The first way is by living only in the dining room – develop the body, gives it great tasks and suffering. This way is called fakirism, practiced by uneducated men. If by some accident one of these fakirs finds a way to a soul, it would be only one man out of a thousand and it would take him 50 years.

"Another way is via the drawing-room, or Monkism. Here by the feeling center and psychic experiences, men have tried to find a soul via religion. Only one from a thousand might succeed, but it would take him, if he did, only 25 years. Then he could pass to the bedroom. The best way of the three is the third room, the bedroom, or mental center, via knowledge. Here, if he succeeds, it would take him about 10 years. This is called Yogism.

"But there is Fourth Way. This is also called Yogi-ism, but it is different because this kind of Yogi has a secret by 'heredity' – initiate secrets. By this

way, with a teacher, a man with the possibility can do the work in 6 months and then be his own teacher.

"I am the representative of the Fourth Way. And I have no concurrent (rival). For instance, ordinary yogis who do not know these secrets lie for three hours a day to learn how to use air. With my secret short-cuts they could do this in five minutes – in fact, like magic, drink the active elements they need from air out of a glass.

"Man as he is has 3 or 4 personalities instead of one 'I.' Each day he is a different person, depending on which center is the day's center of gravity. Only after he has made his 'I' can he begin to develop a soul; and unless he does this, he will die the merde he was born."

He interrupted here to give the example of the rivers again, and concluded:

"Before man can make a bathroom, his 'I' room, he must first repair his old apartment. Sometimes it is cheaper to make a whole new one, throw out all the furniture, furnish each room again, with each new object in its proper place. Then the bathroom can be made and it will be a place to bring up a baby in, with ordered rooms for the purpose of living in order.

"I am the architect for apartments – I examine old apartment, the neighborhood, I tell what reparations must be made and the estimate of the work.

Miss G. said that our experience with him now is incredible – he has never in 12 years spoken directly to anyone. He said to me, "You must stop automatic personality gestures." Twice when he saw tears in my eyes he said, "That process proceed automatically." He also said. "No good when NOT cry sometimes. Your stink-source (he spoke of A who was being recalcitrant) never cry except for self.

Miss G. brought a woman for lunch – tall, spare, French, but lives in England and India; interested in yogis, vegetables, against alcohol and tobacco. He said, "You are stupid. You not understand what I say, you not even listen." She said, "I didn't hear the last part of what you said." He said, "Not even first part, no intelligent look on your face. Even when man not understand, he can have lively look for trying." He made her eat meat and drink Armagnac with him. He said, "Every thinking man – and by man I also mean woman – MUST be occupied only by this interest – to develop a soul." And, "It is as important to compose a dish in its correctly-blended elements as a composition of music or the colors in painting. Harmony in scale. Must have much knowledge to be a good cook. A culinary doctor.

Jan 17,1936.

He said at luncheon: “There are three kinds of onanism; the Greeks called them Onanism, Platoism and Socratism. Now you, Miss G, if you were sick from too much of this, a doctor who knew you would look at you and say which kind it was before he could cure you. Each center has its onanism. Man lost his tail because of titillation in three centers”. Speaking of intensity, he said, “Kiss till last breath.” He said he might add one more person to our group of four. (He did not, however.) We are all tied to one rope and together we must climb the mountain, he said. Miss G is becoming professional squelcher at table - she doesn’t care for levity, even his. He took a tube of blood from my arm for “detailed examination”. We all brought him urine in bottles wrapped, at his instructions, in black paper and a sample of our saliva. He gave us all an exercise together, which we do from one to five hours a day! Besides I have the other to do also.

Jan 21, 1936.

His toast to us for journey up that mountain: “Let God – not your Jewish God – or devil - not YOUR devil – help you return from your journey with feeling all body deserving.” At night he talked:

“Man has wish or desire but not possibility of doing what he wishes or desires. This is not his fault for such he is made. Even if he makes a promise and breaks it, it is not his fault. Either not his fault or we are all guilty.

“For wishing and doing, man is made in two separate parts. And such is the law concerning the operation of these parts that the more he may wish to do with one part of him, the less he can do in this doing part, even with constant struggles.

“For a young person, boy or girl, nature will help in the effort to DO so the person will not have to struggle as will a person of responsible age. After a certain age, this effort is very difficult and often impossible. But there is an artificial aid by means of physico-chemical substance. By the way, for example a substance can be injected which will furnish artificial help for effort for prayer. Or artificial help for effort in some other place. For everyone a different quantity necessary which must correspond with the amount of effort made by the individual. If the effort and amount of this chemical are not balanced, it becomes a dangerous poison for the organism.

"If each of you decide to work on with me, you must now be ready to give up all outside life – no engagements, no cinemas. You must always be ready to be here with me at all times, at any moment I call for you."

Jan 23, 1936.

He said "I am colleague of life." "Only two things not spoiled by age – Armagnac and carpets." He asked each what she had experienced from the exercise. A. said "confusion." He said, "you mean shame? Real meaning of this is shame. You find out with shame you are not like what you thought you were like?" "Yes." "Very good, that tells me much about your new beginning. Already you make 25 percent advance. You know about new birth; the resurrection religion speaks about? You must first die to be born, and now you begin that." K. said she had found out things about herself in the exercise that she had not known before and she thought it was because he had deprived her of cigarettes. He said, "Then you already know that a million dollars not buy what you find out from not having just one cigarette. You must now put the wish for cigarettes into your wish for being. And this is useful for all of you. Say four times daily, "I wish the result of this suffering to be my own for being." To me he said, "Kanari, your result bad, very bad. That can be psychopathic and I even must measure take. Tomorrow when I get analysis of blood, I can tell what element necessary. If some years from now you have result such you tell me, that means you could cure wound in few hours. But now you could know nothing, it must be your imagination."

Jan 25, 1936.

Another examination and the following talk from him:

"We have three tapeworms, one organic, one in feeling center and one in mental center. Miss G. has English tapeworm. That is why I say to her everyday, 'Ah, this food is not like your English frozen beef, your kippers.'

"We must make preparatory work to have one 'I' not three. The work you will do now will give you unchangeable source for achieving one 'I', for taking the quotations marks from you 'I'. Then you will not be a different person every day, but always one person with one aim.

"Active mentation and later pondering come just from the new processes you are about to exercise and from which you will receive results. Active of mind cannot be without taking this exercise in new feeling. And together with the mind. But not mind meditating like monk or philosopher. A

little of this new process put in the mind and you will already have beginning of active mentation. Discussion with other is no good. Only discussion with yourself on the new activity is important. But you must not philosophize. Later I will explain everything. You cannot keep out associations. Let them flow on. You can never be without or you would die. But put them in separate place. Pay no attention to them, but put your intention on new activity. For each one it will be different and you must each ask questions so I can direct you differently. For instance, A. has too much of one psychopathic thing. This same thing Miss G. not have enough of. They must just opposite make. Kanari has too much in solar plexus. She must put attention on shoulders for this exercise. All parts must be made harmonic or bad results will be received.

"Two kinds of vision we have - outer world and inner, the inner world of man. There is an exercise of looking at an object, closing the eyes and still seeing it go on. This for example is for Miss G. very important and if she forgets when she closes her eyes, she must leave off and begin again. This one not for me. The kind of power I have, does not need that exercise. Thirty years ago, I had it so much that I could split that table in two from a distance, if I so wished, and kill a large animal like a yak. "Religion says believe, and uses words like love, hope, faith. I say to you, believe nothing, trust nothing, hope for nothing, love nothing. Yet I am a very religious man."

About this time, I saw two examples of Mr. G's "power" which I have decided to disclose. One day after luncheon, he led me into his room and told me to stand at the window with my back to him. He remained at the door. He said, "Relax all body. If head or any part wishes to move, let move. I wish make experiment and at same time give you something." In a few seconds, my head began to move from side to side and from up and down, slowly. Then a wide hot ray or wave struck my neck with force and moved down, then up my spine. Startled I said, "Oh, you're touching me!" "No", he replied from the door. A minute later he said, "Now enough." He left the room with no explanation and never referred to this again.

Another example I brought him a woman with creeping paralysis who had been given up by all doctors in London and Switzerland. They said she would die within the year. Mr. G. said he could not cure her because "screw" was broke, but he could save her life. Every day he or I gave her injections and he taught me how to treat her with a complicated electric machine that had to be polarized differently on different days. She walked with great difficulty, dragging her feet. One day he told me to bring her into his room. I helped her into a chair and started toward the door. He said to me, "Not necessary go." I turned at the moment his arm stretched towards her and downward in a swift gesture. "Dormez, madame," he said. Her eyes closed at once. For perhaps

three or four minutes he stood before her, passing his hand from her head to her feet, at the distance of two feet, or less. Then he called, "Madame!," and she opened her eyes. After a question or two about her health, he told me to take her away. I went to assist her, but she rose from her chair and walked quietly to the door, to the front door, down the stairs and into the street. I caught her up and walked by her side. "Je me demande pourquoi il na rien fait pour moi aujourd'hui," (I wonder why he didn't do anything for me today), she said. SHE DID NOT KNOW SHE HAD SLEPT; SHE DID NOT NOTICE SHE WAS WALKING). In the taxi she scarcely spoke, left it without my aide (usually it was necessary for me and the chauffeur both, to get her in or out of a car) and at her hotel she easily climbed the stairs. Finally, I said to her, "You seem to be walking better today." "Tiens, why so I am." The next morning, she was as before. Part of this mystery is that she never once, then or later, asked me what had happened. She did not ever walk again, nor did she die. She is living in Switzerland today.

Jan 30, 1936.

He says that half our waking hours must be spent on his exercises. Jane Heap came from London and went with us to dinner. The Rope had piqûres. He said his work would soon be done and then he would go away, travel, dance the fox-trot and we could all suffer as he had suffered. Said how he hated to take people's stink money. To me he said, "After this if I ask you for your left eye, you must bring me it in paper, and your last teaspoon of merde." Tomorrow K's drinks go the way of cigarettes. No more Armagnac for me in 4 days. Towards the end of the dinner, I casually brought out my puff and powdered my nose. Mr. G. nearly leaped from his chair. The gist of what he said to me:

"I am Oriental and man. Never can I see woman making prostitute thing without my insides turning over. Never has woman sat my presence and painted face. I see you make now six times and each time if I had had knife in my hand, I wish send it through your heart. This is seven times and finish. At Prieuré no woman ever dare smoke before me. This idiot fashion put paint on face exist only New York and in territory around Place Opera. Only prostitute make in other places. If you wish make this thing, you must in water-closet go as if to make merde, and not make merde in my salon. What your father and brother say about you ten years ago if you paint face in their presence? Now you must remember that you are one of Mr. Gurdjieff's people and pupil. Me, I am Gurdjieff, and compared me you are merde nonentity. He made himself look terrifying, veins stood out on his forehead as he shouted. Then he made a

ceremony of apologizing to me, Miss G., J.H., and A. in turn. He said, "Now Kanari hate me, she hate me for two days."

February 1936

Feb 4, 1936.

K. and A. returned from motor trip with him, haggard with fear. K. reports he said, "Which would you choose – all roses, roses or all thorns, thorns? One for inner life and the other one for outer? If both thorns you choose, an intentional contact can be made."

At dinner he said, "Just like home" about something. J. said in low voice "Home Sweet Home." He pounced, "What's that you say?" "Just a song we have in America," "Song - ugh - idiot song - sweet home - ugh - just like your America. Not know what home is. Only in orient know what is home, what is real hospitality. When in my house you sit, it is yours, even my soul is yours, such is guest in Asiatic country."

At table A. remarked; "I am simple." He said, "No one simple." One kind of person says I am simple, another kind feels he is simple, another kind tries to act simple. No simple person – all are idiots. Simple idiots and complicated idiots. A. said, "I liked that man who was here last night. He had a kind face. Mr. G: "Yes, he is kind. When he is asleep. Everyone kind when he has a need. But see what he is when you tread on his tender corns." He said, "Two kinds of nerves – high and low." He gave A. medicine for high kind. After piqûres and reading, he said "Kanari writer of délicatesse but I think crocodile write with axe." He talked again about a man as "apartment." Said the exercise we are doing, it will let fresh air in the rooms and drive out stink; for years apartments not aired, people use dining room for water closet, leave there on floor, have dirty banquets, break furniture. And in every room there are also many other compartments – all stink." About now, it may be of "subjective" interest to note that I feel slightly mad from those two meals a day, my two jobs, these notes I keep, the exercises; I'm unkempt from head to foot, no sleep, look drawn and quartered, hurt all over. I've refused to go on trip to Evian and Geneva.

Feb 6, 1936.

Reading before and after dinner. Mr. G. talked about proper mixing of food and showed us a scale of seven notes in spices. Brought out seven bags from the store room and named them do, re, mi, etc. This scale is very bad for all me. A. in bed, K. "upset"; he told both to take enema last night and gave a talk on proper method. "Even cleans up psyche. First must inject 4 glasses, then 16, last time 25. One time I injected 54 glasses, held while chopped tree. Everybody astonished," he said. (K. bravely tried the 16 but she burst on 12.) He said all "lower" floors purified by this process, as much law as bath or washing face. In the midst of dinner, he stopped and looked at a guest. "I can't eat my pudding – I swallow and it stick half way. Must wait for new process to make go down. Such is affect on me of Mees X's vibrations.

Feb 10, 1936.

We went to café to say goodbye, but car was out of order (already) and invited all to the flat for lunch. After he gave us new exercise. "If you ever tell this, terrible punishment for one who tell will happen. Don't know how or why this happens, but always is so, like a law." After piqûres he packed cold food, bought a sweater and we found sweater, scarf and gloves for the old 'Senator' he was taking along – also Nicholai. The car wasn't ready until 7 so we had to go again to café to say goodbye. Finally, he got off into the bitter cold night, bound for Sens without even a blanket in the car. While he's gone, I am reading all the alchemists and catching up on work and sleep. Xenophon defined the "I" as the compound result of consciousness, subconsciousness and instinct. Certainly, simpler than "a relatively-transferable-arising-depending-on-the-quality-of-the -functioning-of-thought-feeling-and-organic-automatism."

Feb 29, 1936.

N. M. friend, handsome chic Park Avenue type, went to Café with me to see him. Why do I have headaches all the time?" he looked at her through his glasses and said, "Liver. Come lunch." At lunch he said to her, "You are combination camel and sparrow. I not understand why Kanari call you friend. I know very well psyche Kanari. Also, I have made very special study of camel properties during 40 years. Never can two such animals be friends – is not basis of friendship. Now I look to see if you are male camel or female camel. I not know yet. But I know even what kind of merde you make. You ever see camel merde? Small hard round, no scientist ever understand why merde like

that. But I know. I also study strange sex organ female camel have. Poor N turned red and white but took it well. Later she said she was going to the opera that night. “No, not go, such music only titillation.” “What’s that?” He told her. She said, “Oh, I don’t mind that do you?” He looked at her a long time and did not reply.

We are having a pause of the piqûres and taking two medicines each, all different. The day he stopped the piqûres he gave us an examination on “How feel?” Katie said “Oh, wonderful, body gladness, I get up in the morning and sing.” He said “Well, I often hear of crocodile tears but never before of crocodile song. And you, Kanari, “Stronger, but sad all the time.” He was delighted. “I have been expecting that from you; is as I thought. This is remorse of conscience and only the beginning. You will be much more sad later, as should be for your merde life you have lived. Later he said, “High sex combined with laziness of organism.” And, “Even God cannot tell where he will find what lost.”

March 1936

March 25, 1936.

At the Café. He said to me, “You must now live in suffering between the two worlds, the two worlds of man. You must die in first, be resurrected in second and only then live in both.” “If only I had something solid to build on. Cannot even explain inner state.” “Yes, no words for these things. But say anything you wish and I will understand from intonation. I have made first stone foundation. You can be objectively happy now. Look at those people there in street. You have something they not have. Later I will put second gravity stone, then third up to seven. You need no longer say you will try. That is over and you now have only to do and do. Later I can tell you what I must not yet tell. Imagination has always been your weakness and your enemy. Must now take off quotation marks (imagination), forget it and hate it. And you must see what your old friends are like. No one who liked you before must like you now – must hate you. Your friends all are special merde. Seeing their merdeness will help you see your own.

Man has two mentations and you know what kind I wish for you. Only now is being data being crystalized in you. In past everything rolled off like water from back of goose. All went in and out again. At dinner my toast was, “Although past was merde, let future not be.” Then he said, “Take exercise, but not one-part exercise like horse or bicycle. Swim in water or climb mountain.

Climb with two watermelons under arms." He said, "The total sum of vibrations from all organs in whole person makes a subjective chord." And, "Good wishing is effective from great distance – bad wishing also." And, "Here is old Russian prayer: "May God kill all people who not make merde in the morning, loud noise at noon and so-so in the evening. Krocodile, you make good translation for this, find words. I not ask Kanari, she too naïve." He described the great storehouse of food in his childhood home - butter was kept underground (he used to steal it) and fresh vegetables were buried in sand.

He gave a talk on objective and subjective satisfaction which I cannot reproduce, such was my emotion for its beauty. I only remember the sheep. "Poor sheep never have husband – except in passing, a by-the-way-husband - never knows a life with husband by her side in old age; and if she does not have subjective satisfaction from him from making lamb, she will be unhappy all her life. Then often she is killed before the lamb is born and then cheated of that too."

"Woman is like leaf – responds to nature in the spring if she is nine years old or 99." G: "Do you know first property of monkey?" K: "Perhaps imitation?" "No". "Look and forget?" "No. Titillation." G: "Here is law. If a person is quick in all things, he will be slow in one thing: if slow in all things, quick in one." "Injustice for one person sometimes bear good fruit for many other persons." "Tapeworm is more clever than man." "Woman's heart is placed just below navel. Agree with me Kanari?" "No." "Dreaming idiot," he said during toasts. "To dream in life is merde, but when know consciously of what is good to dream, then good thing to dream." He said everyone in Hollywood was a Hasnamus and if he were king, he would take them all to the dog pound and make them into soap. For Easter in old Greek and Russian churches there is this prayer: "Essence through imagination - nature presents life; this is truth of all truthfulness." Do something useful or do nothing - don't be American. Do not use the word "think" it is property of onanist."

May 1936

Notes by Kathryn Hulme

May 1936.

About the end of month, Margaret Anderson and Georgette Leblanc returned to Paris from the Midi and sometimes came to lunch. The following notes (two pages) were made in combination with Katie (Krocodile).

G: (speaking to Sardine) Never I see squirming fish get back to sea—always finish on sand.

Margaret: Mr. G, you said Louise is combination sardine and wart. What is wart?

G: Now I put question which will be exercise for your mentation. What is mushroom?

M: I don't know.

G: At night you go to field and there is nothing; in morning is big mushroom. When you know what they are, then you will know what is wart.

M: Then what is she?

G: She is wart

M: Then what is wart?

G: She is wart.

Later he said, "Devil and angel have more vanity than man. If you are clever, have cunningness you can make them your slaves." Now Kanari not look on me like cow on barn door, but like burro. Burro have good inside, have clean impartial look. Mouse also have same look in eye – not baby mouse but responsible mouse. Such look you even want to kiss."

Margaret has chosen zigzag for her idiot.

G: "You cannot be be zigzag."

M: "But that is my condition now."

G: "Condition? Your condition has nothing to do with inner world. You defile zigzag. Wish go too high. Zigzag is high idiot, goes this way, that way, struggles against merde he knows he is. Is as if you, a deacon, put on archbishop's robes." "Idiots best book I wrote"

G. (to miss G.) "You superior idiot, have been for years, never change. You are monster."

<u>May 30, 1936.</u>

A. Arrives for dinner in a very nervous state – she has seen an autobus crush a boy on a bicycle. G. "All things happen around you in life, but you are obliged to be able to take from each. Save such feeling you have for when something happens to a near one." A. "But the boy had such a beautiful face."

G. “Ah, boy is boy.” A. “And I remembered the time I was struck and dragged by an automobile.” G. “That is worse. That is egotism. Egotism for present is dirty thing. Egotism for future is property of man.

G. Miss Gordon, you know what is LAWABLE? (She says something like “increasing tension”) No. Why you think must be increasing? Can be opposite also, like in music, crescendo, decrescendo. Important thing is that all together make the total.

G. and Krocodile are discussing “genealogy” of crippled Frenchwoman. G. says, “Under surface with her you will find a shepherd always, no matter where be, how live, how dress, how high in world. (She is a countess) While for me, always a ‘fantasist- scientist’. Kroc. “A fisherman. G: “Yes, a fisherman.” Kroc. Then you can make good business with her, make a trade, 50-50, fisherman and shepherd. G.(laughing) “Now this begin flowing in me association. Look at Thin-One (A), she not understand how we talk, we talk in images. Have you word in English for talk-in-images? If I can find word, I can tell a saying. There is old Persian saying. “Such kind of talking, talking-in-images, makes the nightingale full.”

June 1936

June 5, 1936.

A big strike is on in Paris. He instructed us to buy candles, bread and find water. “Then have all that is necessary. I accustomed to revolutions, for me is simple thing, all life have had.” The lunch is more bountiful than usual. G. “My restaurant is good restaurant – only here costs many zeros for eating. Why is this good thing? Formulate?” No one can. “Any simple person could answer. BECAUSE HE FLOW FROM JUST.” He speaks about money, then says “From first gravity guest on my left (Margaret Anderson) there comes a terrible vibration.” M. “But you know why Mr. G.” G. “I not know.” M. “But you can imagine.” G. “Excuse, I cannot imagine. You can imagine but I cannot. I am old man. Thirty years ago, I could imagine, even was time I imagine I was God - or your Uncle Sam.” Sardine is staring at him, “Look how she look at me.” Someone says, “Like calf?” G. “No, not like calf – calf always something have in vision(?) future cow.”

Later he says, “Life, life - truth even sometimes I like - much material for rejoicings and satisfactions.” “I know you think at home day and night, but when you come here it must be quintessence of thinking.” “Krocodile

swallows everything except God and the devil." "I believe my instinct more than I believe anyone, even God." I tell Miss G. about Sardine-Wart and she learns more about herself than if I tell her about herself. Old saying, "You not tell him how he is, you tell him about who is under him." "The word in Russian for die-like-dog translates exactly "Go into source for stench." "Exercise not make force. When you make the body do what it not wishes to do, that makes force. For making it do just one small thing which it hates doing, makes more force than whole day of walking." "When tapeworm is satisfied it have beautiful smile like bird of paradise. When angry and wants something, he makes so - angry face, angry noise. Kanari, you ever see tapeworm?" K. "Only in bottle Mr. G." "Ah, then not see psyche of tapeworm if dead in bottle. Like medical student who sees skeleton and then he knows about life."

June 9, 1936.

Margaret's animal was named during the afternoon at the café. A Tibetan yak, cousin of European cow. G: "But in your case, you not look on door or new painted barn like cow which concerns itself only with question, 'Is that my home, or is it not?' You think like businessman about quality of paint, how much cost, if will last, how react in rain - forget self completely." M. "But Mr. G., cows are placid, I don't wish to be a cow." G; "Cows not always placid so sometimes yak, this Tibetan cow, go berserk. People run inside house, shut door. Something take the psyche of this cow and entire being is wild. - try break through wall - could even kill her children." He fills glass again, notices K's is empty and Margaret's half full. "Here is example of strange thing in nature. Krocodile is small man, should drink small. She (M) is a big man and should drink big; but they do just opposite. In my opinion earth-man not have such un-logic."

G.: Kanari, one of your seven aspects is fly-mice. (bat) Even exterior is such for me, can see even when look at your face. You not forgotten I am sculptor, objective sculptor. Kanari; "Oh, dear, bat is squeamish animal. G: Bat squeamish? Or man? K. Man, of course. All mankind hate bat. G. Not when I tell what means.

When he named Margaret Miss Yak, he said, "Has for me Jewish sound," and S. laughs, saying could be correspondent, as M. always saves things. He then said, "You need not laugh – sometimes when I look at you, I see in your face an exact Rebecca. You know story Rebecca?" K. says, "At the well," S. says "Water." Miss G. doesn't know the story either. G. "These old

testament stories can be more important than all the words of Jesus Christ." Kanari: "We don't even know Bible and yet we come here to learn from you."

G: "Yes, you should all have shame. I study bible when I was 12 years old. Little boy, I sit in corner and with one eye I look from window where other boys play and one day my grandmother see me with attention going out window and she did a thing I never forget to this day. She had long beautiful pipe which she always smoke. This pipe she take and throw at me, not at my head but at shoulder here. I can feel it yet. Pipe all broken and was beautiful pipe. This make terrible impression on me and I understand how much she wish I study bible and then I study. I very afraid my grandmother. In village she was the oldest person and had most authority. She had one thousand times more authority than all your kings. She could say to people, "My grandson not study Bible - kill him." And they would kill me.

Kanari: but you don't hate her for it now? G. (with great feeling) I love her for it. K. Sometimes second gravity thing seems more important than first gravity thing. G. You see that? You understand that?

June, 10, 1936. *(still Katies notes.)*

All of us "Knachtschmidt Company" (naked feet) mustered, plus his brother Dimitri and an Armenian merchant who comes late for lunch.

G. (toast to Yakina) May God help you transformate into some other animal. As you are now, any wolf can take. I pity. I wish esteemed animal sit with me at my table. When I used to hunt for yak, never shot at skull, impossible to kill like that, must aim at heart to kill. Also, can kill by aiming at Mary Jane, the soft part. (He heaps the Armenian's plate with fruit to take home. A discussion in Armenian language. Dimitri gives him word.) I tell this man to take fruit home to handkerchief. In old Armenian this means for your woman. Man should be such that woman is for him handkerchief. I know four words in Armenian for handkerchief, but brother knows exact old word. (Armenian goes. G. excuses himself for such guest, but says, sometimes even from such we can learn. You notice, by the way he very nerv-ous because he not have right collar and tie, wear old suit. For him all whole world is here and he nerv-ous for clothes. How I hate such jump-up people. Simple man could never be nervous for such thing. Only dirty small man like this, only jump-up people. (Krocodile says she is accustomed to think of other kinds of people as jump up - like Park Avenue Americans. He says. Jump-up people can be found in other countries, in every place where there is man, in every kind of business. Moreover, you can learn just where to scratch him to make him give you his

shirt - each kind jump-up have certain place to scratch. I know where is for each country, for each profession and can make all kinds wish give me his shirt

Margaret says something, using the word “charm”

G: Charm? What is? No, you not tell. I know what is, I know by inner feeling. Is prostitute word. You not use such word. Only man in quotation marks uses such word. When real man hear, he squirm inside. Moreover, I could tell you hundred just such words – all dirty words, make real man feel dirty when he hears. If you wish be friends with me, you not use such word.

June 11, 1936.

G: I create law of Heptaparaparshinokh. Everything I do, I do according this sequence. Even in water closet my function obeys this law. If you hold watch in your hand, you will see that each amount takes a certain time, all according to law. Not necessary strain and spoil organ. Be patient and all will pass, because this thing also takes place according to law. This is very important thing I tell. If all merde not go out then body take back through blood. Health of psyche depends from all going out. First time, second time, third time, each time so much. Then fourth time is twice as long and half as much as first time and fifth time is (can’t remember what) and then all stop on sixth time.

He asks Yakina did she understand something. She says yes….in a life sense. G: Is the only way - in life. Everything must go back to as is in life otherwise it is psychopathic. In my opinion among all of you is too much psychopathic.

June 12, 1936. Lunch

Yakina refuses the green onion. G: “Only jump-up people not eat onion.” Y. “Excuse me but I don’t like them.” G “You not like with mind. In childhood idea was fixed in you that only small working people eat.” Y. “No, I don’t like them.” G. “Not you. Your mind. Nature cannot not like onion. I can prove mathematically that you like, that idea you have is only hypnotic. Your grandfather, grandmother, eat onion and you not eat because you think is not bonton and only small people eat.” Y. “No, I have no such thoughts about working people.” G. “I don’t know about that. About nature I can prove – your mind not. Is another question. Every chord has accord, every accord has chord. In music many notes make accord but when hear from far, you hear just one note, one chord. Yakina, as she sit here, have part in her from grandfather,

grandmother all family; but we only see one person, only one note. But I can listen and know who was grandfather, grandmother. In every chord I hear accord. Even I can know if her father was a banker or keeper of house prostitution."

Later as he is speaking to Sardine, he sees Yakina staring at him. "Why you look on me? Y: because I see something in your face, Mr. G. I like study it. G. "Excuse, you not see anything my face. For study me, you are too young. Three thousand years in your America, then maybe can study me. Study Sardine. In her I make association, I make changes. Her psyche you can study, you are not able to do more. Study her where I make changes come." Y. "But I see you do the same thing in four different ways." G. "Could be one hundred four. But is not the same thing, I never do same thing."

Later he says, "Krocodile, Thin-one (Alice) now learned to eat correspondent. You can now swagger." Kanari: "Now she is my colleague." G. "Excuse Thin-One could never be your colleague. You could never be like her or she like you, in any smallest way. All arisings are the same but after family, education, background make different. All come out from one stink place, even me, but then where go? You see now why you could never be her colleague. (Lifts glass to toast to Krocodile) Let God help you go Devil through horns of yak. Now you write that down and every morning you read what you have written and in 100 years you not understand.

Mees Gordon, I think now we speak too high philosophy, for them means nothing, only for me is good, I get practice philosophizing. For them it is like putting horse saddle on donkey. In Asia is old saying. Worse to say put horse saddle on mule. Another saying is very correspondent: Bring executioner who cuts off heads into church and let him perform before high altar the special service that only Archbishop can do. Philosophy—you know what mean exact? Logically prove absurdity of absurd."

G. "After roses, roses come thorns. Only then with thorns can man have possibility for happiness. After thorns come the branching of the river, the two rivers. If not get on river which continues, you go on other which goes down, down - and into water closet, moreover public water closet." (He graphically describes the contents – lawyers, priests, Americans.) "I can put everyone in galoshes and (turning to Yakina) also all psychopathics. I old hand psychopathics. But I don't know yet how to put in galoshes a shoemaker or carpenter." Sardine no longer second gravity guest; he says she is special vow-ding (avowed) parasite.

(End Katie's notes)

Notes by Solita Solano

June 15, 1936.

At lunch we told him we had all been ill from the piqûre. A. and K. had cried and considered suicide all day; I had feared loss of memory and my brain had trembled. He said, "Very strong this thing, this medicine help you dying even you can have agony. It makes foundation for this series. Now your body, not your mind, must realize its nonentity-ness. There is no word for this feeling that you had." Somewhere he said "My mechanized resourcefulness." He said to A. "Now you not look on me like cow, but like boa constrictor - not like empty snake, but full one. You not have poison, you swallow whole. Like crocodile."

Kanari: "Sometimes I feel I look on you like dog on master, wait for you to throw stick or order me to sit up." G. "No Kanari, not dog. No dog ever occupied himself with abstract questions." We had to guess how many cabbages in the in the soup - 25. "Funny picture - even camel eat only five cabbages, yet small canary can eat more – when I arrange."

A. allowed only one glass of Armagnac, but wished another. "Well," he said pouring a few drops. "We can imagine the glass is smaller." Later she asked again. He said, "No., my weakness is always reconciling conscience with logic. In this case with all the combinations I can make, I cannot with clean conscience give you another drop. I am monster; self I can lose but never principle."

I showed him my mother's picture. He studied it, gave it back to me and said "mother is mother." "Small thing is like big thing when it ends badly. There is tapeworm - and another worm." "The man who works for a patron (boss) is worse than he who inherits from grandfather (money). He does not participate;, he works automatically when the boss looks at him. He has no sense of responsibility. Russia even, is better than this because each man knows he depends on himself and the bigger man above him. Each works for all."

June 13, 1936. Lunch

A. and K. not allowed Armagnac because of piqûres. G: "You must think about the unsatisfaction of K. and A. There is obligation of man for his neighbor. You look and see he has unsatisfaction and so much you see you must make for yourself, for your inner world. Must make equilibrium." Miss G: "What you make must be subjective thing." Yes, of course. And so I will

make today. I will not lie down after lunch; I will go out without the satisfaction of a rest. "My special saint is St. George. He is very expensive saint. He not interested burning candles to him. He wishes suffering, an inner world thing and only interested when I make something for my inner world. He always knows. This suffering is beyond price."

Jane Heap: "Every day in your house is Christmas." G: "Excuse, twice a day in my house is Christmas. Look, she try to belittle me." Miss Gordon look on me like dog on buterbrod. Germans are only ones who have kept this as it should be. Many thousands of years necessary for the arising of such expression - was self-created. And now Americans and English with wiseacring make it bread-and-butter which is quite another thing. They have broken what was self-created. Very important thing I tell. For you Americans. it is the same in all things."

"All men with quotation marks are same. By every proof of science, by every test, such man is exact same – same tempo, same vibration. All, even his merde, is the same. But men without quotation marks are never the same. There are many different kinds – seven times seven. I am man without quotation marks."

"Ancient science knows that when there is fat in one place, there will be fat in all places. Clever man knows where to look. He look at Mound of Venus. Is lawable that if there is fat there, is fat everywhere. Same for man, woman or even middle sex."

June,18, 1936.

"Man has automatic looking (attention). Every man has a certain amount. This must be put to work, be concentrated. During a certain exercise, contact must be established with the outer world while inner world attention intensifies. This gradually makes clear the difference between the two worlds, will teach you to separate them, not look on things like monkeys, your all going out to the object and identifying with it. Then you will not live in the outer world."

He uses the word "canning" and K. thinks he said "cunning." He explains; "No, canning. Canning and cunning have same root and in ancient times meant the same thing. I speak of real cunning, not the dirty meaning of the word. The highest aim of man is to be cunning. The mag (magus, adept, master) is cunning. The mag is the highest that man can approach to God, because only he can be impartial and fulfill the obligation to God. In old times the mag was always made chief because he had cunning. Other mags could

either do black or white magic, but the mag who had cunning and canning could do both white and black magic and was the chief of the initiates. Man with real cunning is man without quotation marks. Angel can only do one thing. Devil can do all." This was a very emotional lunch. Krocodile tears flowed and Katie wrote this; "When we leave the table he sits forward. His chin is sunk in his collar, his eyes are looking inward and there is an expression of indescribable sorrow on his face. He has gone away from us. Jane said afterward that she saw a cross behind him then."

June 25, 1936.

A fat girl came to lunch. G. said, "Like a barrel. I surprised she knows a little English. Never can you expect anything from fat. She must have learned when she was thin."

July 1936

Notes by Kathryn Hulme

5 days in Vichy, July 7-11, 1936

The Park Café, his summer office. Gordon, Katie, Alice.

Miss G: I cannot believe, Mr. G. that we sit here with you like this. I think about that chapter – Reflexes of Truth – what a great man was being met for the first time. How difficult to see him. And now here we sit.

G: Yes, all is different since accident. Then I die, in truth all die. Everything began then from new. I was born that year, 1924. I am now 12 years boy, not yet responsible age. I can remember how I was then – all thought, feeling. I was heavy, too heavy. Now everything is mixed with light. (Speaks of Vichy springs). Once all French mineral springs were, for Russians, places prostitution. I remember that if American or English pass by, he was pointed out with finger. Twenty years ago never see English in such place. What I say? Twenty years? When I say twenty years, always means much longer. Twenty years now means nothing to me. Now with my inner world I am unable recognize twenty years. (To A.) How feel? I bet you never before, even as a child, feel so well.

A. True never before in life. As a child I was very serious.

G. Was only turkey serious. Now if with new soil you are serious, this can be real thing. (Speaks at length of Mme. de Hartmann and the care she

took of him when they were traveling.) She is first friend of my inner life, such thought she had for me. (Miss G. very touched by this long story. He sees this and says to K.): You know when Miss Gordon was born, small devils, not big ones, but still devils - stand around and prepare her in totality for me. From her, not from your Rocke-feller, my future depend. Small devils make, arrange her whole life, not for her, but for me. (This way of thanking Miss G. too much for her. She is weeping. G. nods toward her, not looking, and says): You know, if she were not drunk, she would cry now. (For dessert there is a perfect melon G. has brought with him from Paris. He says it came from Baluchistan, first flown to Constantinople, then to Berlin, then to Paris.) From all over the world such things come to the rue Labie.

Miss G.: And when you eat you think of friends all over the world.

G: No, when I eat, I think not of friend who send. I self-remember. I have impulse which gives self-knowledge with conscious satisfaction - impulse self-valuation. Because I am such that such things come to me.

(End Katie's notes)

Notes by Solita Solano

July13, 1936.

Café de la Paix. A. and K. remind him they are sailing soon. G.: I will fix in you what I have made already so it will not be lost. I will give you a program for living so you can know how to live in inner life. You must remember when you feel bad you must not lose yourself with mind. Some days you feel bad, then with swing of pendulum, you feel good. On your worst day, prepare for best day. This is the law. What is important is that you never lose self. Let mind be big sister to take care of little sister who is now in the house. Your nature is the little sister.

Same day. Lunch - rue Labie.

G: "Yakina cannot understand as much as Kanari because she has fat behind. And when she makes merde, yak kills all small animals. Can you imagine what would be if yak could fly? (He had said before, "Funny picture how yak tries to be nightingale") "When Kanari makes, not serious thing - even on head could only be wetness. Yes, it would be terrible if yak had wings. (To Y.): "You like?" (Y. does not reply.) "Think what picture that makes. You like such picture?" Y: "Like is not big enough word. No, I not like Mr. G." G. "But you understand more than usual?" Y. "Yes." G. "Then, you MUST like. This is first time in life you ever heard such, never any other place can you hear what you now heard. So, you must like."

His toast to Louise-Sardine: “May both sources help you to make something for you that is your own. Even if only small thing.” Later, “Sardine, you have small brain. Kanari have big brain, for such animal, a very big brain. And is cunning brain. Sometimes is as clever as - dog.”

July 14, 1936.

A. gets new toast. “Let God help you transformate into ordinary idiot which is very high. Next after unique, when sequence begins again.” A: I hope I fulfill your wishing.” “Not hope. In my opinion hope is an evil thing and the reason man is merde, why he is nearly not man any longer. Man must use what he have.” Says someone in England is dirty dog. “Dirty dog is terrible anathema. Highest title in hell is dirty dog.”

Yakima asks him to play for us. G. “I would have played had you not asked me. In order to command me, you must have three zeros. But I not play on such command. I am my own host - but you are slave to anyone.”

A. says she will go dance in the streets for Bastille Day. G. “Yes, dancing can be good thing for education. Go watch faces - you will see faces of stingy donkey - will see your future there. You must see and hate, hate so much you will have big wishing not to be such. Yes, go dance in the streets, can be educating thing.”

July 15, 1936.

G. Today I constate one thing about Sardine-Wart. Before she was dead - only reason not stink was that one small part still alive. Today I see other parts begin res-urrect and I begin to take interest. She is still hopeless but another kind. Now is for us newly arrived baby. I nerv-ous and angry now because in my kitchen sit three parasites who destroy the good of nature. They swallow pieces which I need for tonight and I have not possibility for buying more. They drink my blood.

Kanari: Dangerous parasites if they drink your blood.

G: No, blood can be cheap thing compared what I tell. You speak of blood, not even know from what blood proceed. They do worse than take my blood, worse than if take three liters, because for me to be angry or nervous costs more than three liters of my blood. (Kanari has seized upon “from what blood proceed” and longs to ask.) Kanari, I see that some impulse proceeds in you. Now she look on me like dog on stick, not dare speak.

Kanari: Yes, I will speak, because the words you use just now, "impulse proceed" might be telepathy. I wondered if blood proceeds from different impulse than other organs.

G: Blood is only result - not important. There is many another thing in (Then he speaks of active elements.)

Kanari: Can active elements change bones? Since I have to come to you, even bones in hands are changed. Everyone has noticed I no longer have the same hands.

G. Yes of course. Can even change tail in man. Active elements make everything. Even the kind of breath you have depend from active elements …… Now my tapeworm sing - not Marseillaise or Internationale. He would only sing God Save King, never would he be Communist - only monarchist or republican. Tapeworm of man is lazy and spoiled. He not have, like man, possibility of denying himself or wishing to suffer and make sacrifice for future. (Later) Forty-five francs I can get with bonbon. Four hundred and fifty francs I can get with my smile. Four thousand five hundred I can get with my cunning. But forty-five thousand, what I hope to get tonight. I must sell part of myself - not whole self, but a part.

July 17, 1936. Lunch

G. (to Yakina) Which you wish help you now? God or devil? Devil this time? Ah, then will have roses, roses - for millions of years, until so hate smell of roses would rather have merde to smell. Now I wish drink alone this toast with Thin-One, because tomorrow we talk. Not one drop for you, Kanari, you are representative of art, and not understand commercial thing. Even if you gave all, it would mean nothing, because it is your nature not to understand such values. But when she and I talk tomorrow, only she will understand, because she have factors for this and much data. When I need money, you representing art give all, give 9000 francs and think it is great thing because it is all. But she knows it is only merde and small thing, not even to speak about. For example, remember how I tell about man who take home food for dog? A commercent person never do this, but representative art would take, even if he had no dog, he would say he had and take for his own breakfast.

At Compassionate toast (Kanari's) he looked at Yakina and said, G: Now you formulate. Let devil help …… (Y. hesitates) Tell, tell. You must tell your good wishing for Kanari's health.

Yakina: But I already said it - in my mind

G: is cheap thing in your mind. Many things can happen in your mind that we not know about. You must make effort. Show your wishing with your whole presence, with YOU in it.

Y: May devil help……...

G: Too late now.

Y: Better late than never.

G: Now you are two times cheap.

July 18, 1936.

A: and Katie take him money to Café. K. Here is one pair of group who has strange property – one has cunning, the other canning and when they work together they have good result.

G. You speak in joke but what you say is good thing. Both cunning and canning are necessary in all things. This is why there are two magics. Black magic is cunning – often also is cunning and canness - you understand the difference? Black magic is ideal for being. Cunning and can-ness is like conscious and unconscious, or like two words used in Bible for meaning two kinds of evil voluntary and involuntary sin. You, Krocodile, have cunning, I see possibility for developing big thing. And Thin One have very great canning possibility. What you have now you think is big thing, but compared to how you can be, is like baby made but not born.

July 22, 1936.

G: Time has come when one must do inner work as well as outer. Also exercise I need, so have made plan to make certain kind of massage for a friend who is sick, made such plan down to smallest detail. Today I make this stomach massage truly with almost end of my force - should not do but must do, is part of my task. Now I tell one most important thing, one lawable thing. If something you must do - some work or task - you must plan ahead of time, you can never do at the time, but if make exact plan before you must do, then is as if you have aim and all prepares for this. Now each day, wish or not wish, I will make this massage because plan was made, special combination with friend who now expect it each day. This I not do for him, but for myself, for my physical exercise necessary with the inner exercise I now do. (Kanari's toast) Let God help, only in this case, let devil not take. Devil like people who drink. You drink, only cannot drink. You therefore not correspondent for devil.

A slave drinks more than he can. The master drink WHAT he can. Not be slave. (Later Kanari is staring at him after some great formulation, unfortunately forgotten.) Look! What state she be in. There is old expression for describing such state. With one eye on heaven and one eye on earth and in place between exchange opinion. How is up there, down here, what can be, what will be. But when tired, she not look on sky or on earth, but look on merde

Kanari (utters a cry of protest) Oh, no.

G: In general, I tell. Is such law. This expression from centrum come.

July 24, 1936. Lunch

There is a special baked eggplant dish. Yakina wonders aloud what it is and Sardine emphatically pronounced it "Aubergine" (eggplant). G. Who tell aubergine? Sardine, you speak of only one thing. You not see in this the one thousand fly wings I put. Wing of fly is most important part, all rest of fly I throw away. Practically I will tell you what wings mean - with wings can go many places and I, nighttime, in dream with wing can fly. Yet you not see. First necessary see all, then speak aloud. AND aubergine. Even when not have money pay for coffee, always I have for table, moreover things your Rockefeller cannot buy. This very characteristic, original and strange.

July 25, 1936. Café

G: How with you, Krocodile?

K: Much trouble the last two days with concentration for exercise. My inner world state has been chaos.

G: That interests me to hear. Long ago I tell you I must first decrystalize factors for fantasia - all factors from past life. Then would begin crystalize new ones. The results you imagined from exercise were self-suggested and when you tell me how you concentrate, I smile inside and say "Let be." Now you see what terrible thing is self-suggestion - it makes red see white, white see black, church see divan. You now go through the dying I tell you about - maybe you can now see the merde and nothingness you are. Now you have cleaned and repaired apartment, but it is empty, you still have no furniture. You see yourself now without effect of Kundabuffer. One side is a terrible thing for you, other side is cause for objective gladness.

K: And after all these months of work!

G: It is not so easy, what we wish do.

Later at lunch.

G: This dish today is not horse meat. The French eat horse meat because they have centime-ness. All my life I have prayed I would not have to eat horse meat. The French understand only centimes. If you tell them you pay one or two francs for something, this means nothing to them; you must say you 80 or 50 centimes. Then they are interested, this begins to big thing. There is a word in Russian which is very correspondent, a word for measure, about this long. (A yard) this is divided into 60 versts and each verst into four parts. The name for one of these parts is a word for expressing this centime-ness. In Russia you say just this word for a man and it is as if you wrote a whole book about him. This already gives valuum his smallness. (Later) Half the world is Christian, yet steals old Jewish God. Like the Germans, all people begin now to hate the Jews. Yet they carry old Jewish God in their heart. (Later) If two people have lived a common aim together, they will always have a feeling of brotherly love, whether they love or hate each other, and nothing in family love can equal this feeling.

July 28, 1936.

G: Look, Kanari they take habit expecting you will be put in galoshes for such questions. From one side is good, you can make practice. Slip in and out of galoshes easily, never stay long in, never long out. But when Yakina will be in galoshes, she will stay forever. And if Kanari is in when Yakina fall on top, you can imagine poor Kanari. Must go into toe, worst place for stink.

Y. I wish take risk. Mr. G. I wish to ask a question. (He nods) We wish to know what is the interior animal of Krocodile.

G. Is baby. Interior naïve like baby. Not like Miss Heap, her baby is much older. Krocodile's is only two and a half years. Partly I blame Thin-One. She always wish to be mother. There is a saying, by the way: "If you call yourself a mushroom, then into mushroom basket you must go."

Y. And what is my interior animal. Mr. G.? (He does not reply because he had already given it -tapeworm - and Y. has forgotten)

July 29, 1936.

G: This melon we have for dessert has all kitchen garden in it. Miss G. explain, you understand kitchen garden from Prieuré. (She speaks of

vegetables and the perfume of flowers). No, not flowers. Kitchen garden is useful for man. But never have I flowers growing in kitchen garden. Flower is dirty thing, is the poison of the earth, is masturbator thing. You know why created? For helping Kundabuffer. In old science it had evil reputation, it was material for black magic. Flowers not grow lawable.

Kanari (whispers to Yakina) There go our flowers.

G.: What you tell?

K: I said I had instinct that soon flowers would be taken away.

G: Sometimes you have good instinct.

A: And roses, even roses? The Bible often speaks of roses.

G: For certain things roses are good - but must be in combination. Roses in the Bible are always mentioned with thorns. There is an old saying - "You can understand and love me only when you love - have a passion for - my thorns. Then only I am your slave." In old poetry, not your poetry but religious poetry, there is a very beautiful song that the nightingale sings to the rose: "Even though I hate your dirtiness, I must love you and sing to you."

July 30, 1936. Lunch

This is great day, our day of "destiny-aim" and private instructions. There is a soup for Gordon which makes "property of capacity."

G: (re: Kanari) Look, she have oily face, she wishes I fill glass. (K. refuses.) Come, drink, drink. It will relieve my aching left corn if you will drink.

K. No, even for corn I will not drink. For what purpose was my suffering last week if today I drink more than necessary?

G: Come, come give glass. (She refuses, he takes her hand) I wish you be able to drink like ordinary man. Drink like man who not like to drink. Wish or not wish, drink as those who drink around you drink, for company and not be slave. (He sees Y. smiling and turns to her.) You spoil with smile what I make just now with Kanari. In truth you have not data to be friend for anyone. Now I would never choose you for friend. A moment before, a moment later, would not have been so bad, but at exact moment you smile, as if you had said, "Ha, Ha, Ha" (To K) You must never have exceptional-ness for drinking.

Miss G: I regret what you said about flowers, Mr. G. I am very fond of flowers and you once said I could be manure for flowers and I felt glad I could help them.

K: And you said I could be manure for lettuce, even lettuce.

G: Not even lettuce, lettuce is good thing. Even MIGHT make manure for lettuce. Even is important word. And Yakina - she might make manure for bettrave (beet) - big round, too much have.

Miss G: Too much sugar.

G: Too much there is of everything. By the way, sugar. (To A, for her toast, squirming) may God give you strength to understand what I told before lunch and may you well go and well come. I hope only in memory you will suffer for my food in America, but that all other parts of you will wish for the other food at my table. Let the food you eat here stay in memory only, but the other kinds of food carry with you.

A: Is my animal really boa constrictor? (Her interior animal is tapeworm)

G: Yes, it was easy for me to put serpent in her because she had already had by heredity a capacity for great swallowing. Now what suffering she will have. Because I put the serpent in her, she will always wish to swallow. And sometimes there will be nothing to swallow and so she will doubly suffer.

July 31, 1936.

G: For two years after my death everywhere on earth will be subjective revolution. (To Yakina) You say you hate yourself or you love yourself, but you say it only with your outside. Some day you will say it with your inside. Such thing will happen when I die. All man must die early or late, even I. I have no special (dispensation).

Kanari: (He had spoken of good manners - bonton - about food) In such a case, tiger must be lamb - for bonton.

G: Yes, and fly must be not elephant in this case, but also tiger – such cunning he must have. Stick to be stick must have two ends - to be part of stick is nothing - there are millions of atoms in a stick. (Later) Only in quintessence can there be something for the future. Eat, eat. Enjoy possibilities scale of tasting. He see fly but not see elephant. Behind fly can hide only flea or body crab - something you can chickmake (destroy). But behind elephant can be tiger, and you know what is tiger. You can't chickmake him, but he can you.

No date

G: Kanari is picnic director. All information you must ask her.

K: (Aside to Yakina) I never thought I'd get to be picnic director.

G: What that you tell – "get to be?"

K: It's an American expression for become – I never thought to become expert for picnic.

G: When once initiated for one thing is like chain - one link flows to another. - then whole chain flows. Garder should mean "savoir employer."

G: Tapeworm angry when hungry; also, can be angry when full. Man, too is like that - he is two kinds of angry - when empty and when full. One kind I chickmake like louse: other necessary make suffer first, then chickmake. (Later) How is your friend, Kanari. the Frenchwoman? (I said she was very interested: interested! That is small word. I raise from carcass and she use word like interested for such thing. (Here is a scribbled sentence I found in my notes without connection or relation: You note astonished if knife turns to rose? Then go in galoshes up to hair.) (And "in objective dark, subjective light.")

G: Kanari advice yours give. Shall I invite Miss Gordon coffee drink? You may secretary, especially in this case.

K: You make things very difficult for me. She is my mother superior and I'm afraid of her stick.

G: Not difficult. Miss Gordon, will you drink coffee? (She assents) You see, NOT difficult. Reminds me of one saying, if had stick right kind could mold world. What call such stick?

K: Lever - like Archimedes.

G: Oyoy, hear what Kanari tell. She know Greek mythology, what educated person.

K: But every child taught mythology in school.

G: Then why not they know? Nothing ever know or understand of such thing. Mythology have great meaning. So instead of teaching something America can use, they teach something they cannot understand. So later in life they have nothing useful - nor this thing either.

Yakina has said her shell was cracked at last G: You must know your self-love before you can kill it. (Y. says she knows it now.) And your vanity?

Y. Nearly the same are they not?

G: Is sister. Still not enough to know them. Must now have something independent. (Later) Truth, I tired. Must at all times make effort to move. Then sit – sleepy. Struggle and relief … at such time I can observe how psyche of man is independent thing. (Later) Is one thousand kinds sour.

Jane Heap: (He has been talking of King) I forget sometimes to stand up when they play God save the King. I forget there is a king in England.

G: Must remember there is king and stand up. This is organization, and you must respect it. Outward you must do. Man has two worlds, outside he must ceremony make like others. But inner world is yours - all man has is his inner world, his independent place. There you van tell your king is merde and be sorry you have such king. This proves to me that you read Ashiata Shiemash like American newspaper article and you not understand what you read. (To Georgette) P- - - you not understand.

Georgette (fondly): Yakina will explain later.

G: SHE explain? How could she understand? Perhaps three months after. Never she understand till three months. Now look- she angry.

G: (concerning wolf and sheep (in us) confided to our care) Wolf satisfied? No, full.

Kanari: Is the difference between satisfied and full a psychic difference?

G: No, objective. Only such a condition is a guaranty for wholeness of sheep. Life must always be such - and every day. Not only outer life but chiefly inner life. If so, live your life, you will be intelligent. Can only be intelligent when self-sufficient - enough for all in yourself.

Kanari: Then I must be intelligent for every day I spend in this struggle. But even when sheep is safe, wolf is always looking around- so I'm not intelligent.

G: No, only candidate for.

K: I remember what you said - always fix your eye on the point beyond and take that direction.

G: Yes, but necessary take account everyday of even this, or else that direction will become only a point fixed in mind. - a habit of thinking.

Gabo carries in a baby pig for G's inspection. K: Even looks pitiful, like human baby

G: No, animal baby has possibilities give active element. Human baby not like. Only possibility of giving merde. (Later) Now I hope I have not offended your Scotchness, Miss Gordon.

Miss G: No, can't anymore offend my Scotchness.

G: But you I can offend - angry make.

Miss G: Yes, can angry make.

G: Of course, from same sources is Scotchness and offended-ness. Same root have in psyche. You, Kanari, more than another, understand when I tell allegorically. You have smell. (The word "lousy" comes up.) Americans use this word and not even know what is louse. Louse already is something. He is king parasites. All others are afraid of him; he is tiger among parasites. You see under microscope? He has a fat face. - even like that last photograph, photograph of me. Same face have. (Later) Seven kinds of merde have men. My merde has nothing active; is honor merde because all I use of my food. No animal or bacteria can use. Even can be poisonous for certain microbe. (To me he said when he heard I was going to Hospital de Saint Louis to study) Nerves are pipes—like those for electricity and radio. Remember this when you study. For earning money your articles, only four hours must work if intelligent - only donkey work 8 hours. But study is different - 44 hours a day study because is bank for future. (Later) As cell is in body, you are cell for planet; planet is cell for large system. You are louse of planet and planet is louse for universe. All feeds on bigger organism.

One summer day lunch, Miss Gordon, Kanari, one Frenchman, one Russian,

G. (to Russian) How your interior?

Russian, patting stomach,: Very full.

G: No, that is not your interior, that is your merde.

R: Oh, perhaps you meant my heart?

G: No, that also very dirty

R: My soul?

G: No, he who masturbates can never have a soul.

R: Then what is my interior?

G: Man's interior is his psyche. About this I asked. (This was in French

Another dateless day that summer. Miss Gordon and I alone with him at lunch. We eat in silence. Then he says, "Good, eh? Miss Gordon not even wish speak."

Kanari: When I remember how we all used to wish not take the time here to eat but only to ask you high philosophic questions, I wonder why you didn't kill us.

G: Because in such stench country for police business.

August 1936

August 2, 1936. Lunch - A. and K. in America

Georgette; This soup is strong.

G: Every good thing is strong - it must be so. Now, Sardine not help as must with putting plate - she is only good for dog business, shaming business. Eh, eh, we all have shaming business. (Later he spoke of people who were either hot or cold in disapproving tone. Kanari asked about what Jesus had said. He liked hot or cold but not lukewarm, and Gordon spoke up). But you have said, "Go the whole hog."

G: That is not for people like you - you cannot go the whole hog.

August 18, 1936.

An old Russian who lived at Pont de l'Arche with his tiny old wife has just died and G. is very upset. Last night he loaded his car with food and flowers and took me to Rouen with Valya and Dimitri. We visited the little house and afterward had dinner at 11 - tripe and Armagnac. Later I had coffee alone with him and he talked till half-past two. He said, "I am sometimes God and sometimes I have ten thousand devils." He seemed very upset and for the first time talked on and on, manifesting out loud like anybody else. Up the next morning at six, and to the Doctor's for coffee. On the way back to the little house, we passed the village pall bearers, pushing a wagon by hand. No horse. The village friends were already standing in line at seven o'clock. The Rasputin - type priest Mr. G. had engaged to watch and pray for three days, led the procession, dressed in lavender robes, swinging a censor, his long greasy locks falling down his back. Then the women, Mr. G., Dimitri, Valya, Nicholas

and I followed. It was a long way to the village cemetery…. Afterward, back in the house, G. talked all the time to "Babuska," how fine to have such important priest and all best people of the village, such flowers and such dishes he had brought. To cheer her, he called for luncheon at half-past nine and made her drink Armagnac and vodka. Needless to say, he paid for everything.

A trip to Vichy … end of August.

We started at one o'clock from the Café de la Paix in his car with our luggage, a sack of water melons and Gabo with Valya in the backseat. At Fontainebleau we stopped at Dimitri's house for lunch. There we left Gabo, and took one brother and Nicolai. Although we stopped on road four times, we made Vichy before ten o'clock - less than 5 hours. While he rushed through the stormy night, I worked the windshield wipers found the roads and Esso signs and lighted his cigarettes. We did the roads through the woods at 115 kil. and went through the towns at 90. At Vichy there were no rooms at his Beaujolais so we stayed at the curb while Dimitri gloomily went to look for the rooms. After visiting 18 of Vichy's 5000 hotels, he found us shelter and we had dinner at.

G. had caught cold in his left arm and it made-ned him for 4 days. Also, he was poisoned by the food at our first luncheon place, Russian, and was ill for two days. The drama of rendezvous began the second day. He told us all where to meet him and every time no meeting could take place. He would either have said the wrong name, the wrong hour, his watch had stopped - anything. Then those who had met would be sent to search the missing and thus hours passed. Or he would walk by a table where I was sitting reading while I waited, not see me, tell me later I had not been there. "Even I look on each face. The dinner procession was headed by him, very grumpy, me entranced, Valya carrying watermelon in newspapers, Nicholai with Armagnac in newspaper, Dimitri in the rear with indigestion, muttering, "Jamais un peu de repos."

Sunday was unfortunate for meetings, especially the one in the park. He had told me to meet him in the café by the river and I waited for two hours before the boys found me and took me to the café in the middle of the park. He said, "But there IS water - can see if stand up." Monday was bath again, then at noon we drove 70 kilometers to have a picnic. The base was watermelon and Armagnac only, so he stopped on the road many times for other provisions. At Clermont Ferrand we picked up a Russian nurse and her little boy and they sat on the three men's laps in the back seat. The heat was intense but all the windows were kept closed because of his arm and cough. We looked for ideal

place for a picnic for an hour. After passing real paradises, he finally chose a steep hill where we could not keep our balance, sat on pointed rocks and held the food to keep it from rolling downhill. The men tore the chicken apart with their hands and wiped their hands on their trousers. There was one glass for all. In ten minutes the picnic was over and we went on to a lake. Dimitri said, "Just think, to eat a piece of bread we must come 70 kilometers and spend a thousand francs."

In the car I was talking to 17 year old Nicholai and G. was angry." Mees, you not see all the places I pass because you talk." "I talk to Nicholai about his future." "You had better think about your own future, Mees. He said to look at a mountain before us. "Only now you can see after eating. Never can man see anything when he is hungry - only a bit here, a bit there." We drove another hour to look at a lake for ten minutes. On the way back to Vichy the mother had to stop the car because the child was sick from Armagnac and watermelon. The moon came up about nine and he stopped the car to look and walk about. He pointed to the moon. I said, "You say in your book it is bad for us," "Not for everybody – for some it is very good. I asked what Germany is as an animal - American burro, French donkey, England sheep. He said, "Jackal".

On the terrace of the café in Vichy he said, "Now sitting here reminds me of nine years ago when I was writing the chapter on Good and Evil. I wish know name I call what that man – name please? – made on Atlantis." I said, "His name was Makari and he made a tablet in two pieces." "But what was name I call this tablet? Not memory you have. There was name. I made from two names I see on those two shops opposite here. Please you call waiter, ask what name had shop nine years ago." The waiter said Dé D'Argent (Silver Thimble) and G's face fell. Waiter returned to say he was mistaken; it had been the Boule d'Argent. "Aha! Now I remember. Name of stones was Boulemarchano and you sit in galosh. You only remember liquid, Mees.".

September1936

Sept 20, 1936.

He has moved to 6 rue des Colonels Renard. Miss Gordon returned from London. He said, "Now you are home again. Only here do you all feel at home true sense." Louise (Sardine) served as an example for all of us for America. She selected "best pieces" of everything on the table and offered them to

everyone, not remembering there would be evening guests. “You choose and give as they are your own and not my pieces. Even under you go, looking for best pie. Parasite, nonentity and by the way merde!” Later he gave a toast and said, “You notice my voice, how I make like priest? High priest makes so when he praise God. Like merde making rêclame (advertisement) for diamond.”

October 1936

October 8, 1936.

He said there are three kinds of arch idiots, all joppa (posterior or derrière) idiots; the walrus type which is all derrière from neck down, the jerrihunt (makes impolite noise) and Kodansky. Kodansky is the herring kind. Holland people are herring, as the English are sheep. “Holland is name representing man’s sex organ and as such is known all over the world. Now try see properties of Holland nation in herring, Mees. Look in eye - not other fish, but herring. Also they eat such fish as increase their properties. Small like fish also. People think God made them. Not so. Just such sex organ, not God. God has more to do than such unimportant business.”

Valya has fasted nearly 40 days now. After dinner, “Kanari, come with me for promenade in taxi.” “Where?” “Oh, low place, I tired.” “I think not Mr. G.” “Trouble with you Kanari, you always look for high thing. Must have both in life.” “Have had low thing, am late for high thing.” “Oh, go, go home then. Devil with you.”

October 30, 1936. My birthday

“This day of your birthing.” He is very angry about Edward’s abdication and says can’t believe even such degenerate son of such degenerate father and cousin of degenerate Tzar would do such thing. Even though degenerate, has something royal in his blood, an heredity, which could not permit. In the evening he invited me alone; birthday cake, caviar, clean table cloth. My toast came so unexpectedly soon, while I was eating that I tried to swallow quickly. He said, “Never defile Armagnac.” “But I haven’t yet drunk - I’m waiting to swallow.” “No, you waiting only for me to drink.” “Not true - yes, both true.” “Always in galoshes at your toast.” “Perhaps I am candidate for round?”

"What is round but candidate for square? What is square but candidate for round?"

Later he said: "Your name mean Alone, already I know it, existed in Egypt. I know all names from there. One man there was called Holy Merde and from name he swaggered - because meaning was he had fulfilled such transformation with honor, used all active elements according to law. There was ceremony in Egypt for name's day, not for borning day. Day of physical birth is only of domestic interest. Real day was day you were given some great person's name."

I spoke of sign I was born under – scorpion. He said, "Well, not so bad as falanga, not always die when bite. I remember I used to put falanga and scorpion together in bottle and watch struggle. Except once, always falanga win." About Americans. "They not yet spoiled. Nice burros. Future is donkey, yet at same time might be something else. Not yet crystallized into turkey who have no future. Now this is your day. You may have what you like - only of course not question." The Russian woman who was serving us was laughing at everything even when he scolded her. He said, "Such empty little thing she is - perhaps better she laugh. Even merde can smell sweet. Now I go Café de la Paix. Before I lived with somebody - woman - now I live alone. Live with angel would mean nothing to me. - because I live with devils." I said, "And I live with someone who is always angry." "Always angry, always laugh, always with lovingness, not make different. All is empty thing."

Oct, 31, 1936.

He telephoned, "Come destroy hors d'oeuvres." At lunch he said his seven-year task which had become nine years' work would end Nov 6. Had it not been for the death of Orage, he would have finished two years ago. "Only a sheep, only an Englishman, would have died just then. Any other man, man who was real man, would have waited to die." Sardine said she hoped Roosevelt would be elected U.S. president in few days. G. "No, better the other, no matter how bad is other, better than Roosevelt who has something in spine. That make him not complete man. By his illness he lose one or two parts of seven that makes his "mind" so better any other whole man."

November 1936

Nov, 3, 1936.

Gabo told me that he had said to G. that his stomach was mounting too much, he was eating too much fat, G. gave him look of scorn and said, "Since when egg tell something to chicken?" he spoke to Miss G. about a mistake he had made and said, "Even God make mistake - one big mistake he made ." Miss G: But I thought you said He had arranged everything with Heropass?" G: "All - but not one thing. He made umbrella when He should have made enema. So, now He idiot like everyone else and sit in galosh."

Nov, 5, 1936. Dinner after a silent lunch

Miss G., Yakina who has not come for 3 months, Sardine, Kanari, E.W.

Mr. G. gave Y. one quick look and said only, "Already late. Sit." At toast for squirming idiot, he said: "Yakina are official arch, but now also squirming. Like when take fish from water and put on earth. For this I have formulation. Two chairs. You never can sit in same chair as when first come here, but you have possibility of next chair. Is now or never. I am not Scotch about money like Miss Gordon, but about time I am very Scotch - stingy. You understand? You are merde, all what you do, think, everything. Physical and mentation. God is one point, merde is other point and between is gradations, involution and evolution. Even sometimes God can be merde.

Later, "There are seven aspects of hopeless - dirty hopeless, harmful hopeless, stink hopeless, (he did not give the others). Kanari: "Seven aspects subjective, but objective only one?" G: No, is also seven. Everything is seven. Which of arch idiots is worse, do you think? "K: "Jerryhund?" G: "No. morse, (walrus). Yakina, do you know which is morse?" "Yes, like Miss Heap." G: "Yes. Morse, this walrus sit, look around. In him are all idiots, like in man. Everything like man he have, even brain. And so, it goes, down to tail part. All parts in him idiot, all idiots in him - except of course, unique." Later, "I tell you everything with conscience, clean like Kaiser Wilhelm. If get caught never paper is guilty, only fly." After lunch Yakina explains to G. that the reason she has not come is because she must finish her book. G: Such merde your book, all you write. I pity you. You are turkey. Now if too late you can't come to me any more than you can kiss your own elbow."

August, 2, 1936. [must be Nov. ?]

G: you are all now out of one chair but have not the data yet for sitting next chair. All you do seems to you like pouring from an empty into void, all meetings with people and such things. Later when you have data, you will go back and do this same thing and it will mean something.

I have monkey business, but more than you. One monkey business is one monkey business. Two monkey business is donkey business. Three monkey business is tiger business. I have tiger business. (Looks around café.) Now I see people waiting to speak to me. They are jackals. You know what is a jackal? (A. says I like wolf.) No, wolf is honor. He come, he take directly. You can see him coming and measure take. But jackal, you never know from where he comes or which way go.

You must know a most important thing about man. Man cannot stay long in one subjective state. From subjective state a thousand things depend. You can never know the subjective state of another. It is a typicality of man that no two subjective states can be the same. They are like fingerprints - different in each. No one can explain his subjective state to another. If anyone is angry with you, he does not even know why. You can say, "It is not with me he is angry. It is his state which is angry with me." Never reply with your interior. Never revenge association have. Do your exercises consciously, mechanically and chemically.

Old Jews believe Jesus feed many people with seven fishes and loaves. But how was filled, they not tell. He turn water into wine, but who get drunk on such wine, they not say. He walk on water, but how deep was water, they not tell.

Nov,11, 1936.

He showed some strange fruit, one color, many shades. G: Once I painted picture with this one color alone - yes, once I was sick man for art. (Later) Man is like melon. Exterior all the same have, but how is interior, that is another question. (Later) Caricature is always mathematically exact, is quintessence of line, anywhere can recognize subject. Is art. Is seven kinds, like in everything else. Take example Kanari. From one side is exact caricature of grandmother, from the other side is quite different, is comic like cartoon. Is monster, like all contemporary humanity. She is cartoon.

December 1936

December, 8, 1936.

G: About King of England. Children toy is good but when you see responsible man play with such, you feel shame for him. This is what your king do. Three men should kidnap him, take him away, kill him, so that even his stink not remain on earth, such dirty thing he is. Is Stink Idiot, the 19th, Harmful, the worst kind. If he were eight years old, I could feel pity. But after eight he should be prepared. He not prepare, not take from around him what was correspondent for him - not prepare himself to be king. Was onanist. Even I prepare. When I was a small boy, I see that around me all people was animal, I see and I know that for me that must not be. And I was son of poor man. Even bread not have. (K. tells him that Mrs. Simpson has offered to give up king.) She lie. She not wish now to give up, to free from bad situation. She now have inside her state of "All or nothing.". Before she had cunning, now, she have appetite. She wish now only big thing. (Alice sympathizes with queen Mary) No, not pity. She is exceptional, not ordinary person. Early she took habit of vanity. All her humaneness went into ego, she has pride for class, only people who represent something can be important for her. Already she turns to this next son. He is more nonentity than brother, therefore safe for country. Kind he is, for example, if he wish kiss your hand, he will between arising of wish and expressing it, forget a thousand times what he wished and when he speaks, he will not say, "I wish kiss your hand," but, "I wish break your ribs." This is good formulation for nonentity. Now his brother who was king, I could cure in two days of his disease. If I had to choose between being like him King of England or eating plate of merde, I would choose plate. For his subjective sickness he would make a million people suffer. Miss Gordon you not have objective reason about your king, such idiot you are, though our patriarch. Why I talk with you, I not know. Until your king, the dirtiest thing I know to say is dirty dog psyche. Now I know even dirtier and I can kiss hand of dirty dog because King is dirtier.

(To have fulling wholeness) G: Which you like best, dinner or music?

Miss G: Is different thing.

G: No, is all same thing. Different octave but from same scale composed. I hope someday you will understand the unity of the law of Heptaparaparshinok - everywhere the same. (Later) Function is the process of transforming from one scale to another. (Later) Man never can have will. Only "I am." But not forget and say automatically. If thus always remember

yourself, you can have force to move object across the room. (Later) Man has million times more time than he needs. (King again) King was spoiled. (Miss G. says no, his family never spoiled him) YES. Is even law, so must be. First born is always spoiled. Even with animals is law. But truth would be impossible he be king. Once when I live in Grand Hotel I look out window early morning, 3 or 4 o'clock down boulevards and I see your king there with two these girls who sell flowers. He have arm around each and is having very good time, they also. Such thing for him make data for life. Moreover, good thing for your parliament that he not be king. He have just enough initiative to upset plan made by your parliament. Idea arise in him, something he wish do for people. Independently such arising could be and could be just enough to spoil all plan parliament. His brother have no initiative, also no data for life, so he for parliament and people will be better king.

Someone says "Our five senses." G: Five senses? How you tell - senses? Firstly, is not sense. Secondly, you have more than five. Sense means sensation, you have no word in English for what I mean – feeling – with – sensation. Kanari, what would be word? K: I don't know. G: but try - say what word you think. K: Would "contact" have your meaning? G: No, with eyes I see you and you see me. But unless I wish, you not have contact with me. Svolosh language your English.

December,15, 1936.

G: Lopside, you know, have one end. Is not like stick which have two ends. If man is lopsided, then everything he receives lopsided. If on bad side, then all receives bad; if on good side, then this is not harmful thing. Is why man can sometimes be happy. (Later- speaking of glue) Also from man comes this glue. Three things man can make; glue from brain and feet, soap from fat around middle part and manure from all parts.

December 19, 1936.

He sits with us after giving us piqûres. G: Now I hungry but for you best not yet eat, so I also will not eat. I see around me objective just, and when man sees such, he must sacrifice his subjective. This is one aspect of religion morality …. what religion teaches. Religion is morality. Morality in English is for you big word, in Russian we have two words: one means morality, ordinary, such as we speak of now - other also means morality but more strong. It means opposite of shameless. Objective shame. This man must have.

(Katie's notes combined with mine)

December 22, 1936.

The tree is lighted, we help him pack 40 big boxes with food and presents, there is roast turkey and a pig's head and special herring "from England some, but is Jewish, from Russia." Gordon's health is drunk.

G: Your health, also health of all Jewish who create such thing. You not part Jew, but all Jew because you are Scotch. Scotch is all Jew. You know every race is every country seven kind people have - Tartar, English, French, etc. - but Jew have 49 kind in each country. Legomonism exist that tell until last age no cleaner people exist than Jew. Never they mix. If marry outside then all children from such mixing must die - such law was. Clean people, very special. (Kanari: says Bible called them God's chosen people) God not interest such business. Always among many idiots, one super idiot exists, he more idiot than ordinary, therefore is super - center of gravity. In the case Moses was such. He was center of gravity of Jewish people and he make them chosen, not God.

(Later) There are two kind of English – kind that eats margarine and kind that eats oleo-margarine – two kind of artificial butter, each with separate special stink. People are divided depending on what kind eat. (Miss Gordon quickly agrees.) Mees Gordon you are English and never they can see such thing can be meant for them; they always see in somebody else. English not have sensing on earth for entering into situation of others. (Yakina takes one of his cigarettes.) Ah, now I see you have satisfaction. You know is law - so much satisfaction have, so much dissatisfaction must have. Everything exact valuum have. The rule is add one zero. If your satisfaction costs 50 francs, you pay me 500; if 100, you pay me 1000. You pay in money, of course; here on earth is only money for paying. If not pay me in money, you must later pay me in coal. This expression very ancient understand have. In hell, of course, is coal for fire. But HOW you pay. It takes for each person so many kilos coal a day for roasting him; ten kilos you and you, 20 for me, for example. So if you pay me in coal, this means that each day you must take from under me so many pieces of coal and put under you. So if enough you pay, then I can be very comfortable. But your situation – you can picture how will be?

Special potatoes, curried, spiced, running with butter are brought.

G: Miss Gordon, I think never in England you see such potato.

Miss G: (falling into the trap) Never - and cooked in so much butter!

G: Look, already she begin to be worried concerning how much cost butter. You know for such potatoes like this, must be boiled in butter. But still not clean. You know, for such potatoes like this, must be boiled in butter. But still not clean. You know, potato difficult to make clean, so first butter must be poured off, then again must be boiled in butter. But still not clean.

Miss G: Then three times boiled.

G: Yes, three times boiled in butter.

Miss G: I knew there must be three.

G: Excuse, there is fourth time in this preparation, fourth time potato is baked in butter.

Miss G: Oh, now must go to seven?

G: Of course. Or three or seven. This case seven.

(Note: one day after Miss Gordon had died, I reminded Mr. G. how he had tortured Miss Gordon about the butter he used on those baked potatoes. He smiled and said gently, "Even she believed me.")

December, 23

(He enters from kitchen with suckling pig, holding it like baby, "See what sympathetic expression it have!)

G: (Toast) Sardine, hopeless, yes, you are hopeless. May devil help arise in you hope, Look, she not like devil. Angel, then. Now my obligation with her finish. Now all depend from her, from her surroundings, who she be with. Moreover, if she continue eating how now eat, she will look like second cousin of what we now eat. Also, for all of you I tell. Now fat can hinder work. For beginning was necessary have fat, now must take off and make all hard, compact.

A: (Looking at the wonderful melon) I like melon because it is sweet.

G: Sweet you must not like, you must use.

A; I use for energy Mr. G.

G: Excuse, you not use for energy, you use because you like.

A: No, I don't like sweet.

G: No, you not like - you are slave to. One thing I notice about who like sweet – always in atmosphere around him is bitter, saliva also bitter, even

emanations. (Kanari, as usual, staring at him with admiration) You like how I tell? You like my mentation?

K: Anybody would like Mr. G - such objective sensation.

G: Not anybody, only American. Always you say anybody, to you it seem wonderful, but not my fault America not have habit such mentation. Moreover, I tell in objective sense. I not complete objective mentation have. I not yet complete initiate. There are many thousand complete man on earth, not in world, but on earth. I still have far to go.

December, 24, 1936. Café

G: Difficult tell taxi where go – only know three names – Etoile, Opera, Montmartre. When in my car, can go directly where wish, find smallest street.

K roc: Like Indian in America, can find his way through forests.

G: Not so much for forests am I. I specialist for sand. Never can I get lost in desert. Travel in desert depend from secrets – two – which pass from father to son, a legominism. One I tell. Always big ridges on dunes lie a certain way, according to winds. Before you start, look how lie these dunes, judge about angles, how you must cross, they never change for small storm, only big can make different. Very important know this, because once you are 50 meters from starting place, there is no right no left.

(That night at dinner we help him arrange the presents under the tree and pack 40 boxes of fruit.)

G: Yakina, look your glass. You are yak, yet you not drink even one quarter what Kanari drink. You are big animal, must do big, all you do. Kanari drink four times more, yet think how many canaries would take to make one yak.

Yakina: I have so much to say, I cannot talk.

G: Not necessary talk, only have shame. (Kanari evidently should not have had four times Yakina's Armagnac, for she is manifesting and is in galoshes as usual for her toast.)

K: Galoshes again, Mr. G. Almost is like law.

G: Is not LIKE law. You know, it takes seven years for creating science idiotisme with great knowledge of typicality, polarity. Everything about each is known. I write many books about each. So for you is typicality that you always be in galoshes – your profession is. Look they not even laugh anymore.

K: Chronically in galoshes, once you said. Chronic like disease

G: Not only like disease. Chronic have two meanings. In Greek there are two words, sound nearly alike, Chronos means concerning time and other chronic means keeping. When I told you chronically in galoshes, I mean you are keeping you in galoshes. Many newspaper named Chronicle - not concern time, but keeping you au courant. (A. asks why lice bite and we laugh.) This is not idiot question. Why is always where reason is. Why is for what is not known, yet at same time exists.

Christmas morning breakfast in café

(Eats in silence, says to Krocodile): Now we can service nature. You know this is what food is for – for servicing nature. Truth we are slave, such poor slave. Nature not gives this food, all life man must work to earn it and when he eat, it is not for him, Nature give only one thing, only air. For the rest man must spend life working. And that Old Idiot what create such, He swagger now, imagine, for having created such absurdity. (Alice speaks of Dionne quintuplets, how scientists wish to study them) How can study when scientists themselves come from same barrel, same nonentity is. With five from same birth, nothing to study, no individuality can be there. If people understood what this really means, they would cry. Man now begin to breed like mouse. In old times, even twins was rare thing. Soon five will not be notable, people will speak of six then seven. Nobody see what this means, that quantity destroys quality. (Later) Imagine yourself in Oriental country, not one word have for you association. But there is always language of the smile. Anywhere on earth you can get what you wish with smile - wheat for horse, water, bread - because this smile exactly correspond with what other man feels.

Dec. 30, 1936.

G: this is the most important day for you. In 24 hours from now when you have assimilated this medicine, you will be responsible for all your acts, conscious and unconscious. You take position of responsibility. A record is not kept for each soul, as people believe, but only for responsible souls. There is a law of sinning and you are now subject to this law. If not fulfill all your obligations, you will pay. For every satisfaction, so much dissatisfaction – the Angel Gabriel's books must balance.

January 1937

Jan. 1, 1937.

G: I will take 90% risk, even 99% risk, but never I take 100%.

Around your body is electrical envelope. On quality, quantity, of this material depend if people like or dislike you. Once I had this so strong I could push ship across ocean – and back again.

A scale will always involute back to its beginning DO unless you continue through to DO of next scale. Nothing remains halfway. This is law. But once you have reached next DO, the scale you have gone up is always yours and you can never lose what you have made. If you have gone up scale while transforming your apartment, even if you have no furniture or roof, you have always your doghouse, where you are safe. There are 7 times 7 scales and formulation for 49 is "You-in-yourself."

Now this morning Sardine come to disturb me in café. She think because I sit and look out window that nothing I do. But under such lazy exterior, is such concentration that no man is capable of. Million things I must think about. There is saying: measure 1000 times before you cut cloth. Another saying: Before you give teaspoon medicine to your neighbor, test a barrel of it. This is what I do when I sit alone.

K: Mr. G., you are spoiling us. G: Spoil? How can spoil what already is spoiled?

Jan. 12, 1937.

He speaks of man's "dogs" – cigarettes and alcohol. A. says car is her dog. "No, that artificial dog. Man have few dogs, in truth." Talks to Katie about not smoking as habit. "Anybody can just not smoke. But to do without something as an exercise makes 'source for force.'"

Jan 17, 1937.

G: Truth, my hospitality so big it is my idiocy. The Jews not have this hospitality – they think it idiotic. Jews of all countries never have friend. Each family stay apart. They do not spend money for hospitality because they always see cost of small thing, never big thing. This is one of the aspects of humanity-ness. Not humanity, for word humanity only gives address, while

humanity-ness shows a property of humanity. (To Kanari, agog with appreciation.)You like? I not know good your English, I only translate my thought. (Later) Brock mean chickmake with inner self, outwardly to treat like brother. Full is fool. Job never complained. He even pick up worm that fell from boil and put back. Nothing takes habit so quickly as man, not even pig. With man, once or twice makes habit.

Jan. 30, 1937.

G: The French can do nothing when hungry. English a little better. American can forget and work on – especially if they get paid a little more money.

The rose is king of flowers. Always in Eastern literature is put with nightingale. Rose is loving - loving rose. And besides loving, rose can have many other emotion which idiot English have no name for. Yes, even nature can feel loving – like woman.

The French have no friendship for anybody. Americans have too much – a disease with them. Even in their house they have special room named for strangers. But in some countries is real friendship, such that if I have one shirt only, I am obliged to give half of it to my friend.

G: Miss Gordon, I am empty.

Miss G: Yes, you must be hungry after bath.

G: Not that kind empty. Never is a man that kind of empty I speak about, even if not eat for long time, is always full of merde. I tell another kind.

G: Who from paradise go out, goes out automatically. But to go out from here must have individuality and cunning. Destroy factors in you of faith, hope and love in your old understanding and make new factors with your new understanding. Know yourself, then mankind, then the planet which is only another organism like man, only higher. I say stingy like Scotch for American and English understanding. For Russians I tell Stingy like Americans. You see, I make réclame for America.

Kroc: But only in Russian. (He laughed.)

Kanari: She is taking your advice and becoming light.

G: Not light enough or often enough.

K. Stingy like Scotch, stingy likeAmericans - then where is truth?

G: In this case, truth is in logic. Man never sees truth in his own subjectivity, only in other nations. Stinginess, Jewishness in all man is, in each according to his subjectiveness, in his heredity. All mankind is merde, all different kind of merde, like I tell about that time when I sit in certain field and see about me all kinds, shapes and smells, each different but all the same merde.

February 1937

Cannes, Feb. 6, 1937. Hotel Splendide. Dinner

G: Yakina, you must be happy here near mountain. Yak have one specific, very original. Is heavy animal, too much have inside, yet always go where is most difficult, like goat. Choose to go where is stones, where no other animal would wish go, except goat who is light and for which going is natural. But Yak will turn from smooth path and choose steep high place with stones. Also another very original thing have. (Krockodile, hopefully) Mama-papa business? G: No. Merde business. Then yak very original movement make, not like other animal. If you could watch you could learn much about the human psyche. Look, Krocodile wonder about mama-papa business. This also she makes very different. But here you would not understand about Yakina, for she is too far from you. (He drinks for the first time in many days.) Look, I am already drunk, yet take only small amount. But all in body wait to take. I even assimilate more than is.

The next day he took us up on a mountain pass, high, flat and wide, for picnic on a snow bank. He said, "Here you feel at home!" I caught bronchitis and spent ten days in bed. ("Kanari healthy but weak," he said.)

"Naked for combination is cunning."

March 1937

March 2, 1937. Paris

Krocodile helped peel a bushel of potatoes. He squeezed them, hot, in hands, added four pounds of butter, then a quart of brown liquid, 18 spices cooked together, grated boiled eggs and a bowl of chopped onions. The is the dish the king of caravans eats – caravanpashi – and "you can imagine how is eaten in oasis, with cold water from well."

G: Look, Thin One not like. Not according to her American gout.

Krock (aside) True both ways.

G: How you mean, both ways? Another meaning have this word?

Kroc" Slang word, goo, means something without taste or substance, nothing in it you can recognize.

G: Good word. Even in Bible is. You know how begin – "In beginning there was – GOO. People also can be such.

G: English travelers go 1000 kilometers to see a place, if two friends say it is beautiful. But on the way for 1000 kilometers they see nothing, not look, sleep or read newspapers. If ask them about a mountain or lake, they cannot reply. (Yakina laughs) But also American thing is, though they see more. Now you Yakina, for example, you not notice one thing that change my face. (He twirls his mustache which lately has been turning darker) You not see one change?

Yakina: I see nothing except your mustache turns up.

G: NO. You have months looked on me, always you look on my eyes and see anything else. Yet this is crying thing on my face. (Someone tells her.)

Yakina: I never see color, only line.

G: Excuse, man must not look on one part – is onanist thing you make to see eyes or nose only. Must total see. Man must have normal vision.

Yakina: I am not interested in mustaches. I look on a face as I do on sculpture.

G: Sculpture. Now you have offended me with this word. I am objective sculptor. I see ALL - even all of you, I see even your navel. Crying thing my face. Good expression, eh? Even your Shakespeare could not write

such. He was pederast. Between every line (his poetry) I can smell pederastisme. Such dirty life he had, not like what he write.

Kanari: You not like or you mean his life did not correspond with what he wrote?

G: No, not correspond. (He leaves room but Yakina wishes to argue on.) A. calls out: Mr. G., Yakina here very excited still and wishes to ask a question. (He waits in door.) Y: Mr. G., you know that a change in color is not so essential as a change in line! G. Yes, mees, I agree that your American art books is written so. But still I am a changed man. You know why? A week ago, I had not time to waste in discussion with you. But now (twisting mustache) I have auspicious exterior and suspicious interior, so I must do everything corresponding, even titillate with you.

March 4, 1937.

After explaining (again) about fiancée chicken not being allowed to mama-papa business, he says: In Russia is fish they take every day from water and be then put back. This makes fish angry and liver grow big. Only very rich man can eat. Some process proceed and make in fish active element, like what this chicken also have.

Miss G. Isn't that cruel, is it worth tormenting the poor fish?

G: I pity your mentation. Come tonight, eat dinner, bouillon from six super chicken.

K: May I also tell Yakina? She is galoshes from last night. She knows she was impudent.

G: Not was impudent. She IS such. Russian expression there is: A hunchback can be straightened only in the tomb. (Yakina wished me to state in these notes that she had no idea of being "impudent," that she had too much respect for Mr. G. to be impudent.)

March 9, 1937.

G: Momentum means when your going not depend from you. Same word as inertia, except inertia can be now or last year. Momentum is now, at the moment. As for inertia, for instance Thin One drink my coffee from inertia. She drink it for many months, so she take habit, while not liking. She drinks from inertia.

March 11, 1937.

G: Man can develop taste as he can hearing for music, knowing every note that makes up total harmony. Even he can develop so that he can take doses of poison that would kill other people. Kanari, perhaps you see such in theater?

K: No, but have read. People say Rasputin was such. (I'd been waiting for months to ask about this.)

G: No, he was an idiot, merde, nothing he could do, nothing know. (Later) Americans drink water just before they eat. I have seen. Now the body takes many hours to make liquids necessary for digesting, and the water they drink sucks out and sends on these special liquids and when food arrives there is nothing for transforming. They eat only to make merde. Also, they eat butter which coats stomach so what must pass through the walls (vilii) cannot pass. Also chocolate makes coating. This is only for travel, to stop feeling of hunger. (He talks to a Russian priest and translates to us.) God is old man; sand run out and He cannot stop it, moreover any devil can take. (Priest looked shocked.)

March 17, 1937.

G: My dear Kanari, may God help you transformate into crow, not so much dirt have crow, which if it is small, quality have. After you are crow, we will see. Krocodile, God help you transformate into elephant. (A long discussion in which Kanari used words "middle part.") Middle part not important. Only beginning and end important. Middle part is only bridge. Beginning preparations make. From beginning flow middle and end flow from ---- beginning. Bridge not interest. Only interest for turkey. I hate turkey. I write for crow or for peacock.

Notes by Kathryn Hulme

March 20, 1937. Vichy.

Patron of Hotel Mondiale served boiled eel. G: Why you serve such thing? This is not fish, is serpent, is merde. Normal man not eat such thing. For him is like oyster. Only idiot or German eat such. For us is merde, like oyster. Easter fast have 50 days. (Miss G. says 40 days, the Bible says Jesus fasted 40 days.) Excuse, English Bible made for old maid. I not know your bible, from older source I know. Before Christmas is 40, then two more fasts in the year,

one for planting, one for taking (harvest). This is custom among men through the ages. I know from custom, not from your English Bible.

(He invited them to his room for coffee in 15 minutes. They were three minutes late and Krocodile said it was her fault.) G: Not to one I speak, small or large, all from same barrel, same stink. Now coffee is cold.

Krocodile. But it is good, not cold, just right.

G: This is how YOU like. This you must not tell among many. For you is good but what is your good is spoiled for another. You must enter situation of other – see what it is and put word in your mouth to correspond. Even polite bonton book tell this.

Notes by Solita Solano?

March 21, 1937.

(After an enormous lunch) G: Now how will be about dinner? (Miss G. says she could eat nothing). This answer for present is English property. Tapeworm always answer for present. Man with mind must answer for future; must see how WILL be, not what IS. (Long talk about the customs of the eastern countries and hospitality and humanity-ness and friendship.) China not centrum of humanity-ness – is merde. Also Japan. In process of change from crow to peacock. (A. says wishes to visit these countries, Armenia and Russia. She will not go in plane but in train where she can see something) Even in train, nothing will see. Must go on foot. Once in Russia I lived liked gypsy. I had horse, donkey, tent, friends. I make 20 or 30 kilometers one day, then stop rest two days. On such travel is real. Then you see how everything is – if each place has - - - or two or three stones. Go this way from Paris to Turkestan and will complete education have. Moreover, if you stay a long time with such people, you will gradually become like them, like real man. To astonish you, I will tell I once go 300 kilometers on goat – special goat, special training, over the Pamirs to Kashmir. Donkey also good for different places. Donkey special psyche has. If not wish go, he will die first. You can beat, you can kill, if he not wish, not will do. But if you understand psyche and are friend with, then he will take from you all heaviness and go until he dies. Oh, many friends have I among donkeys.

March 25, 1937. Paris

(An unknown fruit for lunch) G: This is food for man, real man not man in quotation marks. For "man" nature not give such thing. But if you are real man such you can have all the time. (To A.) Your health. Soon you must change from squirming, which is idiot I not like at my table. Always something dirty have. Squirming is only passing state for man. Is state like fish out of sea, man must not long stay or he die and be obliged to be born again. (Note: This is the only time I ever heard Mr. G. say anything that could be referred to Ouspenky's specialty, Eternal Recurrence.) Man can stay squirming two or three months, but not for a year. (Again talks of quintuplets – multiple births.) Imagine what kind of children will be when all must divide what should be for only one. These births are in nature's plan – quantity instead of quality. Nature obeys command from above.

March 30, 1937.

(I stayed in the steam baths did not go to lunch with others and he was very angry.) G: Thin One, obligation not fulfill as cellaress, not fill glasses. You not see all around you, only ones near you. If you cannot fulfill small obligation, then all you do is false. You must feel your subjects around you, for them you must be king. King with all his objects, house, people – checkbook even. Yet even all that is cheap thing beside real man. One man without quotation marks is worth all your kings with all their subjects. Now we drink health Compassionate Idiot. But she not here. She decide stay in bath, not come. She has made clean exterior dirt, but never will interior dirt make clean, still in dirty surroundings stay.

Chicago very dirty, but Washington is even more dirty – is centrum of source for evil. American mentation is such that a man speaks of ten thousand dollars as nothing, even a million, and at same time such man and his family have prayed all their lives for one thousand dollars – is chief dream. Such mentation have Americans – never can they see middle. Only fly or elephant.

April 1937

April 8, 1937.

(Beginning new exercises with piqûres.)

G: I hope with all my heart that there will rise in all of you feeling of humanity. American and especially English people cannot feel for even one person except self, so spoiled he is, so degenerate. Even your Negroes not so spoiled, has twice times more feeling for humanity than you Americans who hate him. Negro I like, I can be friend with, they understand tones and gestures.

(Kroc forgot, skipped my toast) G: For 15 minutes she make plan about what next come, then with great swagger she tell wrong. The terribleness of it is that man – real man - must remember, if not himself, then what he does in relation to his surroundings. Man must always prepare for what he do and necessary that he at all times think about what he do.

G: How many you eat, Miss Gordon?

Miss G. Several.

G: But I not give you several. I give you not more than five.

Miss G: I ate three and three is several.

G: Kanari, what do you say?

K: I say three is not several – must be seven, eight, nine.

G: One is one, two is two and three is three and so on to ten. After one hundred can be many. After two hundred, too many.

(The Frenchwoman refused yoghurt and he said) From where could donkey learn taste of ananas (pineapple) Then eat this, madame.

Lolo: That is not in my régime, do you not remember?

G: How can I remember? For you to remember. You are only one and here in this room I think only of eating, not you as individual. In other room I think of règime things and in salon of music. In each room I am a different man ….. You know how they ask you to eat in Persia? They say Eat, eat, this cost us only merde. No one stop on this word with shock like English and Americans. Even what they offer cost a million, they say cost only merde. Now look how Krocodile look at me. We discuss grammatical question, Krocodile.

Kroc: Grammatical in quotation marks

G: Excuse, this time is only grammatical question. This is exception. At other times what you hear was in quotation marks, as you understanding received it. This time not. This is first time you are worthy to hear grammatical question discussed.

April 10, 1937.

(Catches A. watering her Armagnac and makes her put in also three drops of soy sauce.) She says: It is not improved. G: No, but water is. (He uses a word in French that the French Lolo doesn't know. She searches) G. Look, how she try know, but this will take a long time because she have thick skin like Krocodile.

Miss G. (Lovingly) Not OUR Krocodile. (Katie is her pet).

G. All is same – all breathing creatures are from the same family, like man. All breathe same air from same planet. All make water-closet businesses in morning and papa-mama business at night. English, American, French, all have thick skin like crocodile. What go in, go slowly. Crocodile skin never could skin like cow. Never could be cow, like this French woman here, but could be camel. Like all creatures that breathe, even he takes measure, like man with pill, because he need cleaning.

Kanari: You said that even God needs enemas.

G: Yes, but has umbrella. You know what is umbrella, and what is enema? Two ends same stick. This is why I tell always enema-umbrella. You can imagine when need enema, but only have umbrella to put in behind. Then when press button (spring), umbrella open inside.

Kanari: For six months we tried to think what umbrella could mean.

G: Now you see, simple thing is. Everyone know umbrella – when rain, put up. Such system I put inside. Man even will take in him this thing, because we exist.

G: God is very far – Him you can never touch. Tapeworm you can touch. He is in you. He even have his psyche, like man. He knows more than man because he have very thin, fine, sensitive mentation. (Kanari says: Even imagination.) Of course. Also has more sense of reality than man. Moreover, if you know tapeworm scientifically, you can go up scale. (To A:) Even such small drink, such Scotch drink, you not finish. Scotch, not Jewish. Scotch is concerning mate thing, is organic thing. Jewishness is psychological thing. Scotch I hate physically, but Jewish I hate more because he psychic dirt have –

self-love, vanity, pride. Except for this, I like Jewish, I like for friend.. Only he is dirty objective sense because he had possibility for knowing. Scotch not dirty in objective sense, not guilty, but Jewish born with possibility for knowing, so he guilty. Scotchness have stink, Jewishness have stench. (Kanari ask to be excused from table to wash grease off hands.) Yes. But I not tell my underthought. Good phrase, eh Kanari? From this phrase you can write whole article. My politeness was born before me. (Later) Why you laugh? (K. explains appreciation of his sense of humor.) Sense of human? Not mean nothing. (K: says humor - for laughing) Ah. Even too much I have. No, I had. Once in Tiflis I had three shops and for each one I make such comic drawings that everybody come order – so much that I decide leave that place, something else do.

April 12, 1937.

G: How are you, what notable change have you felt?

K: I have one small strong place no subjective state can touch.

G: Perhaps you mean that center of gravity is now in your nature, not your mind.

(At lunch. A. refuses second helping of fourth course with alarm.) G. are egotist. Speak from head up, not speak for tapeworm. He is in your presence, you must not make angry, you must be with him indulgent. Who be kind to tapeworm, who satisfy tapeworm, tapeworm help him achieve what he wish. (Later) Nervousness has a momentum. Mind cannot stop nervousness, it must go on until momentum finishes.

April 19, 1937.

(A. wears new Easter clothes to lunch) G: Look how she is chic. Yesterday she saw me in new suit and was jealous. Jealousy can be good thing, can be holy impulse. Man see something higher than himself, wish to be such, so make effort. Jealousy can be factor for cunning. Of course, not the dirty kind, not man-woman jealousy. (Greek selos, meaning zeal or eager rivalry.) Sardine, must now pre- cure your hemorrhoid now and forever. You have not enough of this liquid for life – you know this liquid from which all life come, which give all. (S: Blood). No, not blood. Blood dirty thing is. In blood too many things is. This what I tell is in that other liquid.

(Later) Truth I tired. My poor planetary body service me well and I make him object for my sadism. Once sadism mean only sex; now for all things we use this word – new word only has been in my lifetime. (Marquis de Sade) About 20 such words arise since I can remember, even your O. and cocktail. Kanari, perhaps you know philologically this word? (K. says must be from cock's tail, because of colors.) No must come from kaka-tooloo. (The sacks full of contents of cesspools, carried off in the night in Eastern villa if seen in the moonlight, with a hat put on top, is exact representation of man he once said.) Those liquids Americans mix and make merde of. In Armagnac is represented years of man's labor and preparation, also brandy. These Americans spoil. Cocktail have such sound – like French kaka, child's word for merde. Kok is ro- from old word – vowel between consonants not make any difference; is kak, kek, kok. kuk, all mean the same thing in all languages. (K, Cacophony.) This also and Thomas Cook. People think only means merde. True, but bigger thing than they think. So your cocktail – head of merde, tail of merde. Go in behind, come out behind. There is formulation: Nothing is behind tail.

April 20, 1937.

Eat, Kanari, potato not make fat. Necessary eat potato, he give starch. (K. says starch makes fat) Excuse, not if you know with what to combinate. Starch is very important, one of seven divine things for man. Without he could not even breathe. And now man uses such divine thing for collar pimp and petticoat for prostitute. Starch gives everything – body heat, mater even God thing.

He excoriates newspaper articles and the nonentities who write them.

G: They are nothing but use words to cover nothingness. I, from nothing, nothing can take. Normal man cannot take where is nothing. But psychopathic man can take, with his wish and imagination he see something where there is nothing. This is fault of your language, because no meaning have in its roots like Greek. Even Russian of which some words come from Greek, have more meaning than languages in Europe which make themselves on dirty Latin. No meaning in roots, so no meaning in words. That is why life is such empty thing. Kanari, you rice wish? Then I will give you independent. I know you like but pratique show that man that eat rice in those countries where you lived takes force only for working like donkey with body. But for man's mentation he must green thing eat, vegetables, for taking active his mind.

(Later) Two kinds of hopeless idiots, objective and subjective. Objective, he is merde, nothing never he care do. Subjective have possibility not be merde. He already come into place where he himself know he is hopeless, he realize his nonentity. He possibility have not be merde always such as he is. Every man have moment when he can imagine what he is God. (Later) Tibetan tea very wise creation. From centrum come and little by little through the ages man can learn about this. Two days boil bone of yak, put in grains of wheat and butter. All is here what man needs. (Later) English ever see what should see, only see what should not see.

Everybody imagines he have knowingness for life. For this knowingness he is nonentity. Life is big thing and what each man have is only one small piece. (To A) Now everyone imagine he can shear me; you for example. But I make naïve while you shear and at end I shear you, even of last hair, while you sit like dog in street that have lost hair. You represent yourself what you are not. You not know enough not to trust people. I wish you not be such. Here among us you can be (off-guard?), but not in world where you soon will be. Now you are in scale of nonentityness. You will go, but we not will be separated as long as with inside we same idea have. Separation not touch your inner world, because we are together there.

Small thing can be big thing. All big things come from one small thing.

(Katie's Vichy notes)

April 23, 1937.

G: gives sacks of food and money to two Russian families he knows.

A: I begin to understand what satisfaction you must have.

G: Not necessary philosophize. Their emanation, vibration go out - some of to go to you. This is indirect food. Even this expression comes to me from Bible is early Christian word – indirect food. If I am not happy, I can be made so. If people around me happy, then I can be. In indirectness, mechanically, does such force show. It comes to you without your consciousness – undirect. Same word can be about sin – undirect sin, unvoluntary. So this indirect food is. Same thing also can be voluntary. You think, you make consciously. (At dinner) Carrots I never eat. Yellow is a dangerous color – you have this understanding, even about Orient. Never I eat cooked yellow, because we not know totality of what transformate when yellow you cook. Only fresh yellow can eat.

In Café Gambrinus

G: Already you decide to go out from average-ness. Remember when you do exercises, that mind is nothing – important only as policeman. Feeling is more near nature.

(End Katie's notes)

Notes by Solita Solano

Paris. Easter Lunch

G: My tapeworm wish sing something higher than God Save King. K. Hosannah.

G: No, that is dirty word, only use for marriage and business you make after.

Miss G: Hallelujah? G: Is big word. Have in three things; Amen, God help us and I am you and you are me. Very old word. Jewish take, but not is Jewish. Not even your Pope understands what it means. It includes all the scale from merde to God. In this high expression is everything. Now Russians feast for 50 days until Ascension Day. I glad some of you went to service Russian church, participate in such good thing, for feeling experience. All Christian church ceremonies derive from old Greek church. Once in Jerusalem I saw such ceremony must always remember. There were nine different kinds Christians all together in one place for Christmas, even Abysinnia. This Greek ceremony open up all your feeling, you forget why is, for whom is, you forget even Christ such knowledge they have composing ceremony, for psychology of people.

Alice: Bible also taken from Greek?

G: Of course. Everything Christian came from old Greek, then they spoil. All, all comes from Greek. Even from before time when was Bible. Your Bible is new book, composed four or five hundred years after by fisherman. And you know what understanding have fisherman.

Alice: But before fishermen, what happened to knowledge?

G: Nothing happened.

A: But where was it?

G: Was with initiate people, as always. They always go in one stream, it still flows today. You ask question from one stream, I answer from other then

you go back your stream with answer. Before there was nothing for man in ordinary stream, but fisherman who knew nothing, so nothing could tell but their wiseacrings. You remember the two streams I write about? Difference between two streams is the difference between interpretations of events on earth. One make elephant from fly, the other make fly from elephant. Even have two explanations – one for mankind, one for me. My stream is initiate-ism. You know what is in hypnotism. With that you can make water of wine for some people. For others you can make wine of water. I tell about my stream. What happen before not interest me. Remember my chapter on Maralpleicie – also Konuzion and poppy seeds. This is what happened before.

Miss G: But there have been messengers like you.

G: Many such there are, even you have in America. For English and Americans they are something, but for me they are shit; objective sense …..

You wish believe your Bible. Your Bible is one thing but mine is quite another. Nobody now believe in Christian thing – not with inner world, especially young ones. Nobody but English old maid and Lesbian America. Your Bible is hodge-podge.

Let your vow be your left-shouldered angel.

About your exercises, you will do not one time, not 100 times, but 1001 times you will do and something will happen. Now is your imagination, but sooner or later will be fact.

May 1937

May 14, 1937.

Miss Gordon telephoned that he had telephoned from Cannes that "something was" with car, and that he was taking train. This noon, still in pyjamas and typing, he sent me word he was downstairs. I threw on topcoat and descended. He was pacing up and down, his arm in a sling. Before explaining, he asked all about each patient to whom I had been giving piqûres in his absence. The he said he had left car on a steep Alp, engine off, handbrake only holding, while he went to look at view. In car were woman and children. Suddenly the car moved forward toward curve and precipice. With one gigantic bound – "never was my brain so quick" – he leaped on run-rung board, put his arm inside and steered the Buick straight off the road down hill to the only tree

in sight. Car smashed to bits, but occupants saved. He was thrown into the air, turned over several times and fell on his shoulder. “Almost all was finished, me, my work, all of you.”

At luncheon were Miss G., Sardine, Gabo’s “fiancée”, the Persian musician who is copying G’s music, Kanari and a guest from old Prieuré days – the Englishman Pindar. Miss G. asks permission to drink first toast to “thanksgiving” that G. is safe. He accepted. Then he asked Pindar’s opinion about potatoes.

G: I can see from your answer which way you have gone since you were at Prieuré.

Pindar: I want to ask you a question. I want to know why the French cheat one.

G: Now more than ever I can see which way you have gone, you ask such question.

Pindar: What do you mean?

G: Tell, Kanari.

K: Elephant from fly.

P: Whats that? What elephant? What fly? (Pause) Don’t you think, Mr. G., it’s a good thing to learn languages? Wouldn’t you advise people to learn Russian? Isn’t it worth the effort?

G: No! You must have big aim, what you learn is BY THE WAY. If you can’t learn by-the-way, then you don’t fulfill. Not man’s center of gravity to learn languages. Either man must DO – or have fly business. (Later he remarked) Conscious labors and intentional suffering are the same thing – they cannot be separated.

May 15, 1937.

In Café de la Paix, he gave the following exercise to Miss Gordon and Kanari, in nearly perfect English.

“Take any object and put it to your feeling; represent it to yourself with feeling. Then answer these questions. Remember, you must EXPERIENCE these feelings, Kanari. And you, Miss Gordon, you must stir (up) you mind, and police with feeling. As you continue this exercise, you must diversify your objects. Here are the questions.

1. Its nature and beginning.

2. The reason for its arising and the aim of its service.

3. Its dependents and if anything else can be used in its place.

4. Personal opinion of it and objective opinion.

5. Its end and its following actualization.

6. Its legitimate use and the most great and most small use to which it can be put.

7. Its objective inevitability and its subjective property of service.

At lunch later were Miss G., Cmtsse de Messey (Lolo), Georgie Lyon (English painter and friend of Lolo), Georgette Leblanc, Sardine, Kanari.

G: Well, esteemed guest, how is sweet potato?

Innocent Georgie: Oh, it's delicious.

G: What word she tell? Often I hear that word but don't care to remember it.

Gordon: She means she finds it very good.

G: Such word she use every day for everything, for merde thing. Yet now she use automatically for such thing as she eat at my table. This word is merde and he who use is also merde.

Gordon: She hasn't had education like us, Mr. G.

G: No, not even for merde has she education. Even words not have in English, whether is hard merde, soft merde, she thinks all is one kind.

Georgie: Is there more than one kind?

G: Is seven kinds, of course. You think the English when they eat Australian frozen meat have same kind merde as when eat MY food? (Later, to me, about my exercise) This is valuable thing for your future, this new task; you will see how you have lived – like in box, like piece of merde. After you do, then you will come to me with different intonation to ask me instruction.

May 18, 1937. Café de la paix.

G: Ah, Kanari, as my secretary I now commission you somewhere find me Frigidaire for apartment. Or else all spoil, such heat is. For buy or for rent. (But he did not trust me and came along all the Blvd. Hausmann until one pleased him.)

K: If automatos in Greek means impulse in English, why then does this Greek word, automatic, taken into English have exact opposite meaning?

G: Word means same, only in your idiot understanding you have transformed it. Means in both language, from-self-arise. Only man in his mentation think he has consciousness, thinks that from self can arise something conscious, when can arise only unconsciously. (He might have continued if taxi had not stopped …)

Lunch.

(Miss Alexander there, to whom I have been giving piqûres also. Her chosen idiot – compassionate – had been changed by G. to round the last time she had come. To see if she remembered, I asked her before I gave the toast.

Miss A: I don't know. Was it changed?

G: To round, I think, eh Kanari? (Yes)

Miss A: I don't remember, but it wasn't round.

G: (Studying this situation) What idiot you think you are today?

Miss A: Oh, eternal.

G: That is round; sometimes I call from birth. Now, if you ask my opinion what you need is to eat much of everything and – (He stopped because she turned away and was not listening to him.)

G: Now I am old man and must slowly eat.

K: I could never relate such word as slow to you.

G: When I tell, it means something. Never I tell something without a meaning.

May 19, 1937. Lunch. Miss Gordon, Sardine and Kanari.

G: Never use word "very" because it means "too much."

Miss G: Such a good lunch today.

G: Yes, everything I have, except of course, one thing. Everybody has many wants, I have only one. I need only one thing. This end of stick not correspond and even I can tell reason. Is my organic weakness of mind, I had this even when young. Is because I waste my time trying to make people understand. So everything I have – except. Why I have all except is because I have knowledge. Now about this weakness that consists in trying to give understanding to people – this weakness is only this much. (He measures off a quarter of an inch between thumb and forefinger.)

K: Then that means you are just that much lopsided, Mr. G.

G: Yes, Good, good. See, Miss Gordon, how she understand.

Miss G: I'm afraid I didn't understand what Kanari meant.

G: Truth English are hopeless, such sheep, donkey understanding have. Truth, pity you are English. That story about looking at sky for 15 minutes before replying is for you and all English understanding. Reminds me of a story of a cart to which was put horse, a goat and one tortoise. Of course, all could go only as fast as tortoise. The horse very nervous. He said, "What is this destiny which is written on my forehead?" The goat also spoke his opinion. And the tortoise who nothing understood except that every day the mountain before them seemed as far as ever, became very angry. He cursed and complained, "Go, go, at all times we go, but stay nearly in same place." So, Miss Gordon, never will you understand the two ends of stick. Now look her face. In one place she love me, in another she hate me. Unconsciously, of course. If it was consciously, long ago I would chickmate. Now why we sit? As for me, I have eaten justly. Now, Kanari, why you look on me? Something you notice?

K: Always notice new word.

G: And you, Miss Gordon? You notice? Of course you not. "Justly" was word.

Miss G: I didn't notice because you always use "truth". (!!!!!!)

<u>May 21, 1937.</u>

He persuaded me against my better judgment to go to Vichy in the car with him, Miss Gordon and Gabo. "Mountains we will pass, and in such surroundings, you will have material for third food." We started at five o'clock, Miss G. and I in the back seat with luggage and odorous food packages, piled to the roof. Once on the road to Fontainebleau he let out the car, passed by

fractions everything ahead, or when half passing, fell back to the horns and screechings of cars behind. I was so terrified that I told him so and begged him to slow down. He said he had to test the car. “Must it make one constatation. Too much money I pay for this car.” I said, “Then stop and let me out.” A trifle more slowly, we went to his brother’s house. No one there. I took my traveling case and got out. “How now, Kanari?” I said, “I’ll take the train here and meet you in Vichy.” “No, no, now you sit beside me, slowly I go. Moreover, never I go more than 90.” “No, you go 120.” “How you know?” “Because I see on speedometer.” “Impossible, never more than 90. Now you sit till Montargis and if not like, there you can go and sit in train.” It was better after that. We arrived at Nevers at 10, dining room was closed, but they opened it and we had cold dinner.

G: Curiosity is a dirty thing. That is why I am always angry for idiot questions, why philosophizing makes me nervous. In English not exist two words for two kinds of curiosity, as in other languages. Word for other kind of curiosity is needing-to-know. For this needing-to-know you must have material. Then you will not receive something empty. (Near Vichy on the road there was a new lighting system.)

K: You say in your book such use of electricity is a bad thing. Yet more and more is used.

G: The more they use, the greater will be the catastrophe. (A cat crosses the road.)

K: Why do cat’s eyes shine at night?

G: All that family have such property.

Miss G: To make other animals afraid? Mesmerize them?

G: Yes.

Miss G: Snake also?

G: Yes, snake also have. And this same property man can achieve also.

In Vichy many Russians waiting to see him, conversation mostly in Russian. I was too nervous to face the drive back in car, so in two days I told him I had to go back in the train for an overdue article. “Such story you can tell Miss Gordon but not me,” he said. “Joppa, you miss too much, truth.” Yes, I missed a wild ride on which he raced a motorcycle and nearly crashed.

May 30, 1937.

Dinner. Olgivanna and Frank Lloyd Wright, their child, Miss G. and K.

Wright: Very interesting these idiots of yours. I've invented some also. (G. did not reply.) Mr. G., you're certainly a good cook... You could earn a lot of money cooking somewhere.

G: Not so much as I can earn shearing. (After dinner he brought out a chapter of the second series and asked who would read.)

Wright: I read very well. (G. left the room.) Damn, I'm sleepy. I can take it. Still, I don't want to hurt the old man's feelings. (Began to read as G. returned and sat down. Wright stopped reading) You know, Mr. G., this is interesting and it's a pity it's not well written. You know you talk English very well, too bad you can't dictate. Now if I had time you could dictate to me and I could write this for you in good English. (Read a few pages, stopped again.) Now I must go and take my little daughter home. She's sleepy and so is her father.

G: Yes, for her sake stop. She is young. You, of course, are old man now and life finish. But she only begin.

Wright (turning red) My life's NOT finished. I could right now make six more like her … (Olgivanna with tears in her eyes led the child to the door.)

May 29, 1937.

We went in the morning to examine his patient, Lolo. He asked and asked about interior feeling but she couldn't understand what he wanted to know.

G: Two kinds of feeling has man. Physical, such as she told, and another kind for which no name in English or French - feeling-with-sensing. Perhaps all her life she never put attention on this normal thing. Now me, every day I can tell you the difference in this feeling from what was yesterday. Yet if I should tell her she is uneducated, she would be offended. Cow with merde brain.

At Lunch.

G: Tapeworm sing God Save the King. Like English people. But while this they sing, inside quite another thing they tell, just opposite. They say to the

devil with the King. Others sing International and Marseillaise and that makes middle part.

K: You mean that neutralizes situation, like safety valve?

G: Of course. Just why such thing is of value. Then can starving people sing God save King when such nonentity go by. Truth, nobody can have such fruit as this. Take, take, not pity.

Miss G: That's what worries me all the time Mr. G. To think we have such thing when others have nothing, are starving.

G: Miss Gordon, Miss Gordon, may your mentation not be such.

Miss G: But you tell in your book when some people have much it means that others must have nothing.

G: Yes, I tell how is.

Miss G: But why should it be so?

G: I not tell why. Eh, Kanari?

K: You always say fact is fact.

G: Is exact. Now explain.

K: It is explained in chapter of your book – "Man's Understanding of Justice is an Accursed Mirage."

G: You see, Miss Gordon; not enough read my words, also must think about what read, otherwise empty will remain.

June 1937

June 1, 1937. (At cafe)

K: You said the other day that starch is holy thing, God thing. I wish to ask you if it is because, like amber, it has three forces in it – carbon, hydrogen and oxygen.

G: Now I not answer question because you go too far. You have one hundred kilos much curiosity, your enemy. Before you had one thousand kilos, but still too much you have. I advise you recognize enemy and full stop make. Also another constatation I make. Something wrong your sex. Sex very

important thing is, like light, like air you breathe, food you eat. If you are in parts, two of your five parts depend from sex. You must more normal live.

K: Cannot even think about such things. I do not wish. I have no time. In 24 hours I have only 4 hours for myself and I must use them for sleeping.

G: Then lopside you will be and I can nothing do, for this depends only from you.

(At lunch)

Life is not always what you see for a person. Is like the theater - behind. Also behind fact is always one thousand facts.

June 11-12, 1937

He made long speech today in Russian at his brother's face, on and on and on. When he went out to the telephone I said to Dimitri, "For heaven's sake, quickly tell me what he said, what he was talking about?" D. looked at me sheepishly and said, "*Vrai, je n'ai rien compris de tout cela."*

I have been treating his patients with two electrical machines – very complicated and different adjustments for each. "Every person is not polarized alike," he said. The color in the tubes is beautiful – like xeon – even he admires. "Something in color IS – like life. And sometimes in colors one color something of itself it even has – especially in electricity."

G: Usually we constate with the mind. But in the case of constating with feeling instead of with mind, what would such word be in English? ???

(About Persian musician) He is half woman. Such representative of art have too many "feelings". We have name for such in Russian, one word, meaning prostitute-in-trousers. (Later) You must now have three states - active, passive and LIFE STATE.

July 1937

July 8, 1937. Lunch

G: Now I constate Sardine has changed. Not so much antipathicism as formerly when everyone wished to push her away. Sardine, something of woman you now have. You are not soft merde now - kind that is result in morning from too much eating some one kind thing because you like, not because hunger have. But not yet are you hard kind. You are in middle. Words exist in other languages for these different kinds merde. In some languages words exist for different kinds of blood. Never word blood use alone, but one of these words to say what kind is.

(Later to Sardine) Today you eat like sparrow. You know sparrow cannot eat much, but peck, peck. Spoil for others.

Kanari: (hoping for more details): Like canary?

G: Canary I not know

K: A little you know because once you said is svolosh bird.

G: I know of course a little but I not know canary BEHIND like sparrow. Sparrow I know like myself.

Miss G: Yes, you used to paint them to resemble canaries. I always wondered if that were true or a fable like the ladder in the desert. Stilts in sand and ladder.

G: No, those stories true, only ten percent is fantasy. That reminds me how I suffer when Soloviev died. For three months I was not myself. Such friend was - more than brother. I love him more than a mistress. You all notice something fishy with me today?

K: Well not fishy, just unusual.

G: Unusual with me is fishy. Just today I carry (wear) corset, so all is changed, even my mind.

K: Yes today you talk.

G: What egotist you are. Sincerely tell, how now your tapeworm?

K: Is sleepy, but I will not let it sleep.

G: I do not like your tapeworm, mees. You understand why? (Here he said something of a different (new?) gravity which I couldn't get at all) You understand what I told?

K: First thing, but not second thing.

G: Well, try to understand next thing (Later we were all talking about Amelia Earhardt having been lost but he had read it in Russian paper) I not pity. Only fly should fly. Not man's business - is all vanity. Are two kinds of fly - fly that should fly and when fly up chimney (His expression for going bankrupt) My experience with flying is with chimney.

(Later) There are three kinds of satisfaction: From the past, after suffering from want or need and you satisfy this waiting place; satisfaction of a present need; a satisfaction of something you know is also for your future, that will continue for your future good.

July, 25, 1937.

Picnic at Vernon, on the hills overlooking the valley and river.

He gazed a long time, sighed and said, "Ah great nature!" After long pause he said, "What millions lie dead there from past times! And if all of you are such as they, you too will finish as such." There were cold chickens, fishes, loaves, the greens he calls "vegetables", melons, Armagnac. Gabo had not come, so Nicholai had everything to do and received all the scoldings. He spilled his drink and blamed me. Sardine fed her dog and Lolo fed hers. He said, "You know, some people not even have dog. Nothing they can put selves into. Sardine thought that this meant approval at last for Tuppy!

G: Miss Gordon, you not eat vegetable?

Miss G: Not today. I'll eat them tomorrow.

G: Ah, tomorrow, I know this disease. Often I tell tomorrow not exist. Is only today. What must be done, must be done today. It is now or never. Next day twice as hard, day after four times as hard, day after four times as hard. Only you can count on today.

August 1937

August 12, 1937. Lunch.

Mme. de Salzmann, Miss Gordon, a doctor for Dimitri who is ill, Sardine, Putnam. There was fiancé chicken which was explained to Putnam - "not yet play papa-mama."

Putnam: You mean, it hasn't lived.

G: I mean not yet has dirty psyche. You know, people can be exterior clean but interior dirt have. Such people as who do dirt things only in imagination. Such people are one hundred times dirtier than person who at on —do dirty thing. That is masturbation. So there can be chicken maturbator. Contrary case, can be people who have objective clean psyche, though exterior can be such dirtiness as even stink. (Putnam began chatting to K. about boats) Now I listen to American chatter, from empty to empty. Could only be between Americans. Worse it hinder other people who have inner life.

Putnam: But we're at table eating.

G: Many people mentate when eat, even choose such time and those you hinder. This is American typicality. They have no education or understanding of ceremony. (Later) Other people read books but I verify.

August 13, 1937. Friday Lunch The Englishman, Pindar, Miss G., Sardine, K.

Mr. G's brother very ill. "He really die three weeks ago - now is only artificial.")

G: I am unique for the number of books I have read in my life from all countries. When could not read a language, I had someone translate. Five or six a day I read, often before sleeping. Now I nothing read.

Pinder: I feel I deserve this dish because once for three months when I was with the army I had only a plate of beans three times a day. So now I deserve this to make up for that time.

G: No, not deserve. If once you unconsciously had such experience and then if you consciously again repeated experience, then you could tell you deserve.

(My toast is drunk and Pindar asks exactly what is Compassionate idiot.)

G: Everyone is idiot, even God. But when these idiots see another who is another kind of idiot from themselves, they become angry and curse him. This is very characteristic of these idiots. Now compassionate means that among this company can sometimes exist idiots who know that all are idiots together so they pity all and not become angry. These are compassionate. I am unique idiot so I am no more this idiot compassionate.

Pindar: I am too fat, I eat too much.

G: Eat, eat, man is not pig. Man has as much room as his valise.

P: What valise? Leather bag for traveling?

G: (Patting his stomach) this is man's valise.

P: Why do you make me eat so much?

G: Because I saw valise when you came in

P: It's because you make me eat too much.

G: you speak only of this moment, but what about past? I am not responsible. Exist 20 formulations about stomach. One I tell. Pig have stomach, man have rubber. That is why man can eat more than he can.

Miss G: (beginning to be angry, no one, can guess why) I've seen pigs that have eaten more than they could, Mr. G. Such fat stomachs.

G: (enjoying her angry and goading it) Yes, you've seen - because pigs not wear clothes. Now you walk about apartment freely, before glass, without dress, before and after eating – and you look in glass, Miss Gordon. (Gales of laughter)

P: Why am I so fat? Do I eat too much?

G: Reason you have never heard of. Now I go lie.

Miss G: (still mad) I don't understand why you always say that about pigs. I have seen pigs. You, Solita, you just sit there and listen to him and laugh but you haven't seen pigs in the country as I have.

G: No, but sees my idea.

August 16, 1937.

(His brother has two nurses. Cancer of intestines and stomach. Mr. G. said yesterday, "By next week it will be finished. It is time, in nature, in any case."

We drove to Fontainebleau to meet G. and Pindar on their return from Vichy and picnicked in the woods. "Man not know his own nose but at same time wish to know God's tail." Dimitri died the last week of August. I was sitting in the Café de la paix with Mr. G. that morning and he told me the story. He had managed to keep the cancer inactive for 12 years, but when Dimitri quarreled with him three or four months ago, he went to a German doctor for relief and that doctor had given him a medicine that was poison for him, made the 'flower' grow on the cancer. "When they sent for me at last, it was too late. All could do was give such thing as keep him live artificially. But he in truth died three weeks ago and if today I joke it is because already I pass through experiences of his death. I will put him at Fontainebleau, my three near ones, mother, wife and brother, all one place, and very original place. Nearly all family now dead."

K: "Your new family that loves you can never be the same." G: "No. blood thing so strong for me. But real family, sisters, nieces, not love but hate me. Because I am source, it must be so. Never I give them enough and for this they hate me in their hearts. For what you can buy black dress, Kanari?" "If necessary I can find for 150 francs." "Yet each woman ask me 600 francs and there are eight woman. I gave just half what they asked and all angry on me and curse me in heart."

Later at lunch with Pinder, Miss G., her niece. Mr. G' would not allow me to refill Pindar's glass. P. looked at him suspiciously.

G: Perhaps Mr. Pinder, you think it is because I am Scotch that I not give you more – that perhaps because what I put in glass cost 40 francs? Then look!" He lifted a full glass and tossed out the brandy into a corner of the room. "Not make dirty – with alcohol soon pass," he added gently.

After Dimitri's funeral, he went away till Sept. 5, and moved into his brother's apartment, leaving the Rue Labie for Colonels Renard. I reported on all his patients and on my own exercises. He said, "Now you learn more in one month than in all your past life. From results from last exercise you can now understand what I told six months ago, that what you had done till then was all preparation. Now you can see why. All your life before was merde, now can be otherwise and can have hope for future. Think, if for past 18 years you had worked like now, what could be today. Then I told him of the strange things

that had happened to me in London in July. He understood but would not explain. At lunch there was a wonderful new soup with apricots.

G: What call this?

K: Pit. Also called stone.

G: Stone? Such name of dead thing give to this? This is heart of fruit all life is inside, hundred trees grow from just one such. Who give such name in beginning is merde and he who repeats it is also merde. Now collect these hearts and after we will open and you will see what taste can be.

G: Man is such that he can only be egoist. He is so made. But sometimes for an hour or two, what he can do is to look around him, see what it is, how is and make program accordingly. Only this will show him how he should be. I hate man. He is merde. Because he has brain he philosophizes with it. Give him a rose and he thinks it is merde - not recognize. Give him merde and he says it is rose. He has lost good clean instinct that even animals have. They know the difference between rose and merde. Now because such day I will drink Armagnac. In mornings with such troubles as now, I make nervous, make elephant from fly. But with this Armagnac fly is not elephant. Fly is - fly.

K: (Forget the reason for the question) I hope you are not angry Mr. G.

G: Angry? No. Long ago I lost such property. Now I have quite other factors

October 1937

October 19, 1937,

Just two years from the first evening with him and year from the day he told me to go review all my science studies and report. I had written out a report on my years work, my conclusions and "discoveries". I took it to the Café and he gave permission to read it and looked at my chart of head and body systems, to which I had applied his law of trimonia for certain exercises. He said nothing when I finished reading, so I asked, "Perhaps I was impudent to compose such paper for you?"

G: Not impudent. Even I thank you. You have unconsciously given me answer something I was searching for my book, about future of humanity. If

you have found such thing, others of future humanity also can do. This is what you have enlighten for me.

K: I can't believe it Mr. G.

G: You can believe. You have initiated yourself.

Oct 20, 1937. Lunch

G: This is dish of day

Loomis: You can't say dish of day - it's not English

G: Kanari what is your opinion?

K: Dish of day is good expression

Lomis: But it's not English

G: What would you call it, Loomis?

Lommis: In America we say – ah, ah, uh, uh - well, we say plat du jour.

K: That is not English either, Mr. Loomis. (great merriment to all)

G: let it be dish of day, Loomis. She is my philological secretary. (This is too much for Loomis. He turns on me) L: how long have you lived over here.

K: Sixteen years

G: She remembers English very good, Mr. Loomis.

L: (Paying no attention to G.) Then you are an expatriate!

Oct. 30, 1937.

K: May I tell philological surprise? Root of word vegetable means lively, to quicken. But when people are slow, we call them vegetables, while real meaning is opposite. Why?

G: Some vegetables, yes. Two kinds there are. One kind slowly grow, other like cress and mustard and Russian kinsa, can grow in one night or two, three days, such very green ones. For feast days we used to plant in dishes of black clay the night before and next day put on table before guests to eat while

growing. You remember at Prieuré, Miss Gordon? Ah, such feasts we had Easter. You must remember all your life. Who was not there miss too much.

Miss G: There was also other end of stick.

G: Of course. All great things must have two such end of stick.

November 1937

Nov. 11, 1937.

G: There is voluntary and involuntary sin and there is also voluntary and involuntary goodness, or good deed. (He wanted a word, one verb, in English that means "take blessing from above and pass to someone below." I couldn't find. He says it exists in Greek in the gospels. He said that Jesus knew his nonentityness and should he return, he would be very angry that people had said he was God.) (Later) Pray today that God sleeps - then only can the devil and his friends help me. I have more friends among devils than angels. When God sleeps is the only time the devil he is free to do what he wishes, for good or for evil.

(Later) If all REAL words and meanings in each language were taken and from them one language created, it would not be necessary to go to school. (Later) I can make of logic what I wish, such idiot thing is. I can prove anything I wish logically. (Later) Sleep is a strange thing. I very sleepy, my brain needs because not enough I have these days. I am, yet I am not.

January 1938

Jan.12. 1938

G: Pity you not understand what I tell Dr. Hambachidzé – a Russian saying which could offend in English. This expression means thick-ass, and when is thick in that place, everywhere take on such thickness, even brain and of course understanding. Such thickness always mean round idiot, same thickness on all sides. Yakina, objectively you are round idiot but subjectively something sometimes you understand in life – something else you have – you

can make stop on round before continuing. So let you be official square for toast. This objective round is not altogether your fault, is result of your education, your past life. Fault is in your past, how you lived gives such result today.

(His brother-in-law is very angry because of something unwritable he says to him, and asks how can he say such a thing when he is married to G's sister?) But I say what is sister to me when there is a question of logicality? You all know my principles.

(At square idiot toast) Yakina, pity such fat you have. You had once divine thing - divine possibilities. But now is too late. You have terrible ass. (To his sister for round idiot toast) De naisance, from birth, is now as was always. (Looks at Christmas tree.) In general such tree is merde. Anyone can make, only when YOU make, is subjective, you lose something of yourself. But when I make, is objective for all humanity. Can be like medicine for you. If you sit and look for two three hours, you can remember all your childhood. From such merde thing, I make butter. Same thing what I do with my music and my kitchen. I make another vibration from these ordinary things. Truth, after look long time at this tree in beginning of new year, you can have food for whole year. Man can look and not be just animal.

G: When once you are initiated for one thing, it is like a chain – one link flow to another. And then whole chain flows.

Jan. 17, 1938. Lunch.

(There was only one yoghurt on the table near his place. I passed it to him for his kasha and this is what I received):

G: Aha, she wish remind me, but not for my sake. Is because she also like. Look how she manifest her ego, wish for herself and not will think pass to neighbor. Kanari, this dish is for all, not just you. (To Georgette) Not eat such food with fork - must finger use for seven day pig; for birds must always be finger. Ancient people all this custom have. Why you smile at me Miss Gordon?

Miss G: I was smiling at someone else.

G: No, on me you put attention, on me you smile. Even was psychopathic smile. Was logical it was for me.

Miss G: No, you had only end of my smile. It was not for you.

G: Then I am sorry for you. After all these years you must manifest either logic or idiotism. I not wish you to be idiot. (About something else) Now you can article write, Kanari. She write article and truth is not bad thing, at any rate, is profession. Moreover, American article not so harmful as here. Other countries write and make suggestibility. But in America article such as go in one ear and out other. Your friend (poor J.) also write article, but I have seen her and nothing from such as she could be otherwise than empty. I am very patient. In two or three years she will be candidate such place as I write about in book (dog pound) where put in machine and result come out in two places - one is soap and the other is manure. (To Monique at her toast) Let God or devil help you. Choose.

Monique: What is the devil?

G: Whatever you wish. Everyone thinks of the devil in a different way. Choose how you think of him now, not what you will think a month from now. (To Yakina at Square Idiot) Let devil help take you from your present center of gravity. I wish devil help you put this another place. You know what place yes? Let be such conjury. Ass also is question of taste, like devil. Half of humanity like only such as yours, other half just opposite. Understand, Yakina?

Yakina: No, I don't think so

G: Kanari, not explain her. Only scientific man can such thing explain. You have not science for such explanation. You understand what I told? Not altogether I think, only almost. Is life thing, not such idea with which you write your article. (Later - about some Greek root). I was God 43 languages - WAS God, now I forget. Languages my pastime in past. My past was till accident, then I begin my real life. I am only boy of twelve.

(Looks carefully over each person's melon rind and points to Georgette's at which she desperately begins to peck with a fork, saying, "Je n'ai pas fini, je n'ai pas fini!) Such thing makes me nervous. Nowhere on earth now can such melon have, no one today can eat such; each one cost not less than 350. (Kanari begins to saw at her rind, Yakina has virtuously dug into the deepest places and so has clean conscience). Most active element is under, close to skin are the mineral salts. And this you would defile.

Jan. 19, 1938.

(From the steam bath to lunch, with Yakina also invited)

G: How you, Yakina? Hungry after bath? Then which such dish as we have, all is roses roses.

Yakina: Yes, too good I suspect.

K: (Seeing he has not understood) She means she is suspicious that soon must be thorns.

G: Always is so when too many roses. Roses roses. Now must begin to make only roses rose. Then rose rose, rose thorn, thorn thorn, thorns thorn, and thorns thorns. I will begin to make and you, Kanari, and Miss Gordon and Sardine think how can make for her also, each one of us one part. I have thought, that is one-fourth part; Kanari also? That is one-half. In Yakina's past, all her can-ness (ability-to-do) was in her - (makes downward gesture). When I first saw, I thought was only such representative of art as have willlessness in one place. You understand what I tell, Marguerite?

Yakina: Yes.

G: No. if understand you would not carry (wear) such thing. (Looks at the rows of bracelets she wears on each arm.) Kheu! Life such idiot thing. What good life has dog. He at all times wish only eat, only one tapeworm has. But biped-man has three tapeworms to satisfy. But some people have two tape worms atrophied. What was that saying - blessed he – (We supply.)

Blessed is he who has a soul. Blessed is he who has no soul. But grief and sorrow to him who has its inception….

Jan. 29, 1938.

(I pointed at Yakina's arms to show she had left off all ornaments and he smile and said, "Little by little." After lunch he went over to a pot of dead flowers and smelled them.)

G: Finish. Nothing they have. Involution. Never was otherwise. Never active element they have, such dirty thing. From birth was only involution. Always they are false.

Jan, 31, 1938.

(Nicholai's father dying. Tried to get him a job at my bank, so was late for meeting G. at café. Found Yakina sitting with him. Her face so distressed that waited until she left. Previous day she had said to him, "I see I irritate you Mr. G., so I will go")

G: I nervous and your friend come talk empty to empty. So I tell her I explain to Kanari who know my language. She too light for this work, too

American. In life she perhaps have something good. But not for our work. I thought when she first came that after she had contact with me, something would collect in her empty place, but now I see is not so. Such empty life leave empty place. In fact I could tell is piece of meat with emanations. Good formulation, eh?

K: I think the reason is result of philosophizing for years with Orage's New York group.

G: Yes, like that she is victim of self-observation.

K: Perhaps not too late, Mr. G. She has such wish to work, be different. She truly knows there's nothing else in life but your work. Don't send her away.

G: Well, I will see what I can combinate for her. She must all stop make, wait, begin again another way. She has only automatic mind, she not understand what of mind is two kinds and she quite not have real mind mentation. You explain her, but not use my words. (Yakina was stricken and cried then rebelled, then said she "disliked that man," then decided to face him next day and ask again for some task.)

February 1938

Feb. 9, 1938. Lunch. Yakina, Georgette, Miss Gordon, Sardine, Kanari.

G: (pointing to small black olives) Is exact like merde of sheep - small, neat, clean. Very convenient for flies to raise eggs in, raise family. Not all is merde and finished, something good remains. Is best manure. But merde of man is worth nothing - is good only for cabbage. All from sheep is good - wool, food merde - all.

Miss G: (happily) But you say English are sheep.

G: (scornfully) But that is for English psyche, Miss Gordon.

(To Georgette at squirming idiot) God or devil. Choose.

Georgette: Both together.

G: Excuse, cannot have both. How can be Paris and Berlin at the same time? Devil help small things, only so much he can do.

Feb. 15, 1938. Lunch Stanley Nott, a friend of his, one of Jane Heap's group who is a painter, and Miss Gordon

The painter: Why do you close the shutters and keep out the light?

G: Because sun pass from there in street. And at all times my principle is - all or nothing.

She: (pointing to yoghourt) What is that?

G: Fou-fou.

Stanley: (during lunch) I think you have great patience.

G: I not have patience - I have practice

Stanley: I have patience.

G: Of course. You are English. All English have patience.

Stanley: I am ordinary idiot and round idiot. (Laughter) But I prefer ordinary because we hardly ever get to round. So I am ordinary idiot.

G: How can be ordinary? Not have ear or taste. You hear one-tenth like normal person, so rest must also be such. But you happy (lucky). Not hear at all times what makes nervous.

Miss G: Perhaps he is tense at all times, trying to hear.

G: No. I see that after tenseness to hear he sit back, rests, dreams, is happy.

Stanley: What can I do about it?

G: Go Place Opera without trousers, with peacock feather in certain place and there walk. (In the café one morning he had told me about the ridiculous occult exercises practiced by ignorant men in India; one exercise is to put feather in "certain place", climb a tree and sit there, trying to feel like a bird.)

Feb. 23, 1938. Lunch. Miss Gordon, Yakina, Kanari.

(G. soon began again on Yakina's plumpness, asking me to supply a word which I refused.) G: When have money will find new secretary. Your obligation is to help when I look for word. Yakina, you were perhaps a

beautiful child? You can thank this you are now spoiled. You are now receptacle for merde.

Yakina: Yes I know.

G: Must be so with such child. Everyone spoil, parents, young man. Child not study, not learn. If beautiful face have man or woman, always I know is merde. If lawyer or engineer I need, never I choose beautiful face - merde is. I choose monster. He is not spoiled. He study when young, is clever. This is fault of education and parents. Now late, time has passed. You no longer are hard - just liquid now begin. Fault of your past that you are now empty.

Yakina: What shall such person do?

G: Get on table - do some new titillation.

Yakina: I don't mean in life.

G: Ah, now very expensive costs such help. If for moving Kanari, castor oil costs 25 francs, for you will cost 50 francs. Now you must pay for your past.

Miss G.: What can she do?

G: THEN (in past) you must do - or your parents or guardian. Man must then, in past, take thought for his future.

G: Man is such that he wishes to live until last minute; such is his egoism. Let whole world burn, but let him live.

G: Animals and children only have property of pure logicality. They not philosophize. Only a philosopher can understand philosophers.

G: Who eats such foods will die but who does not eat will perish like a dog. Another kind of man is also – who doesn't even perish like dog. If dog perishes in street, there is body, you can see, but cannot even see body of the other kind of man. He neither dies nor perishes - he disappears. Like the soldier of Arc de Triomphe, he is unknown.

G: Man is man. He cannot be otherwise. He is such that he can never change his body. He can only be as he is because he is the result of heredity. But his mind he can educate and with this control his animal body and not be its slave. He must at all times struggle and as his mind grows stronger, so will his weakness grow stronger. This is good thing, it makes for more struggle, It is not good if body at once lies down. He must command, he must direct. Easy not eat if not see. Only is difficult if he sees before him - and then no take. This will make something for him in another place, something he can use.

G: Man's body is merde and merde can never be diamond - not even merde of diamond.

G: Miss Gordon, please put off that light. (She searches for the button)

Miss G: I cannot find. I have never done this before.

G: But one hundred times you see me make this. Such is automatism of man. Of course, if once he does, he can do it again. Is automatic. He must observe, look, know how to initiate what he must do the first time.

In Café de la paix.

(Kanari's best friend has quarreled with her bitterly over her devotion to Mr. G.)

K. please tell me what is Miss X's animal?

G: Ah, again, miss, curiosity you have. (We sit 5 minutes without speaking) Now one secret I will tell. Not only is tapeworm in stomach of man, other worms are also. Perhaps you have seen in merde?

K: No. Only in books as usual.

G: Ach! Well, worms, such snakes as I tell about, is different kinds in stomach of man and of them all, one is always chief in this universe of stomach.

He commands all and from him, this chief in struggle of stomach-universe, from him depends of what consists the psyche of this man and what is his animal. (Then Mr. G. talked on for twenty minutes, a monologue of which I could not understand a single thing, nor retain one sentence. When he stopped I told him I had understood nothing.) Of course not. Only I tell you this to give you taste of such thing.

G: Not use word wish. Man not has possibility for wish.

— — — — — — — — — — — — — — — — —

Section 3

Copies of Solita's GURDJIEFF notes

October 1935 through January 1936

October 1935

October 21, 1935. Copy sent to Jane in London.

October 23, 1935. Café de la paix.

We're all here - Gurdjieff at next table with proofs - on way to Fontainebleau to see machine and lunch. Last night he came to hotel with book. Read (Katie) till 2 a.m. Janet came down and met him-said, "Handsome aristocratic old gentleman." Elaine wanted to meet him so we took her to dinner. In taxi he told me something special. Will write that and everything else later.

October 24, 1935.

We came back from Fontainebleau at 5 and went on till midnight, again here at hotel. Gurdjieff took Louise, Katie and me down on the train - we took him- and we read the book all the way. We saw the machine. It looks like a radio. Beside it is a rod that emits moans, music and shrieks according to how it is approached and its tone changes for each person's vibrations. It will produce, he plans, the music, the music for some of his exercises, danced near it, also colored lights on a screen simultaneously. His invention. That's all I understand about it.

Then we lunched. I might say this was in a shabby little house where his brother, wife and two of the Prieuré girls are living. Wonderful lunch, idiot toasts. (Ordinary idiots, super, arch, hopeless, compassionate, squirming, square, round and zigzag.) He gets angry if you don't know the sequence. He's been mad at Katie a lot, but not at all at Louise because when she happened to say the right one he said, "I am astonished." I took the trouble to get them from the Crayfish chef who is a toastmaster for him. Then after lunch we read the book again and took the 4 o'clock train back, fetched him later café and as no one had any more money for Crayfish, he accepted to go to the small Greek restaurant on our side where we dined. There was a man at next table, something from the Near East, and he talked Turkish to him and Greek to the proprietor, he said he knew 48 languages well and 20 more like English - as

well as he knows English, I mean, which is pretty well since his last trip. He has told us that he plans a group here, and it seems we three are elected to help form it. He continues to be "tender" with me. Katie told Janet it's plain he feels something special for me. Last night he told the others that I had will. I feel so right with him. He hasn't told me yet what he promised to alone with him - just said, "You very dirty but got something very good- many people no got - very special." I trust him because I know he knows me the way you do, as well as all other ways. He knows something was the matter with my father too, he said, "Your father made you with his finger." Adding something I really cannot write, but meant he wasn't a normal man. His figures of speech are unprintable sometimes. He made a tirade against Alice but I promised Katie not to tell what he said. He told me I was to have piqûres, not take the ampoules. Also he took aside the proprietor of the Greek place last night and gave him instructions about me which I shall ask about next time I go. Diet, I suppose, but perhaps, not to let me drink. Once he laughed at me and said, "You have screw loose." Katie reads the book aloud – and very well- and he watches me. He seems to have no interest in Louise at all, scolded her yesterday because she wandered up the road when he was about to talk to us. I am exhausted with the strain. The last chapter was the one on Orage, excoriating him and Jessie. This last ms. is so well written you would love it. So wish you were here, its learning secrets by leaps.

The first thing he said to Janet - I brought her down and introduced her "old friend, we live here 10 years" - was "Oh, sometimes such friendships very bad, great hate comes out, then love, then more hate."

I said, "I'm too old, it's too late." He said, "Never too late, but now it is twice as hard." How I wish you and G. were here. Never has he been so accessible. At the Prieuré no one could talk personally with him or ask a question. He talks ALL THE TIME and teaches in every sentence only I don't always know what he means. But what a vibration in the air! You learn something just from feeling him near.

October 26, 1935.

Wish I were able to write a full report but so much happens my brain feels like a beehive, I forget the details because each time I hear something I try to put it through what I know already and in these lightning changes I get the result all I can and forget the cause, which could be called scatterbrained. Another session last night. Did I tell you that in the street (I walked home alone with him - to hotel for reading). He said, "You wonder why I so good to you?" I said, "Yes, why?" he said, "I no tell you yet," and smiled under the electric

light like a father. He said, “Is it bad for you that I good to you?” I said, “No, I am sure not.” He said, “I think so too.”

He is used to Louise asking something, then looking at me instead of him. He has seen Katie do it too when she forgets. But last night when Elaine who was reading the book for the first time looked over at me as if to say, “How am I doing?” he said, to me, not to her, “Ha, you look at her with left eye.” Since it was she not I who was looking I had to think this over. Then she said, “Left shoulder wing angel,” to me. Katie said, “Oh, that very bad.” He said quickly to her, “No, not always bad - often very good.” Anyway he knows about those girls, that I am that terrible thing known as MONITOR, but he isn’t angry. I was so terrified in those meetings when they’d look to me at the wrong moment. I feared I’d get jumped on for whatever bad thing in me makes this happen. He said, “You lop-sided” to me and often he invites everyone to have another drink out of the bottle and adds, “Except you, you can’t have this time.” Also he said to me, “I see all your quintessence.” But didn’t say what it was like. He hasn’t told me yet what that good thing was he was going to tell me. (You can see that my prose has suffered, I can’t write a sentence.)

The reading last night was about some of his personal life, the two beings nearest him he really loved, his mother and his wife, their death, how they sat, he between them, on a bench in the garden, his emotions when they would understandingly whisper together behind his back, how he would see them coming down the path together, one bent with age, the other, once so beautiful she won a beauty contest from Lina Cavalleri in Russia, bent and yellow with her disease (cancer), and all of this translated with such perfection that I wept. He went on about death and the treatment afterward of the dead. He told us in the café he had been four times through the initiate mysteries of Egypt.

Yes, this is a miracle. Every night to see him and feel (not being able to THINK) new understandings spring into existence, the old horizons fading backward…. Last night he said “Human Nature - you give someone something - first time he prostrates himself - second time he kisses your hand, third time he gets familiar, fourth time he nods and fifth time he insults you because not enough, what you give” … I don’t know what planet I’m living on but it’s not the old one.

<u>October 28, 1935.</u>

“Dirty” means the result of mixed bloods - so does “Jewish” when it doesn’t mean stingy. Scotch very dirty, he said . . . mixed blood means not so

much chance for individuality. Irish very dirty, Spanish worse than Italian. He illustrated this with the word Jewish - never straight Jew - always German Jew, American Jew, Spanish Jew, French Jew, etc. About my father Gurdjieff didn't mean anything sexual as practical as impotence - he meant abnormal - not fit to propagate - Katie said that after - saying this to me he looked at everyone and let them know he meant all American men, because he says the active principle not working there in our country.

There are FOUR centers, he said. The fourth is SEX. (That worries me a little. Good to have sex life, bad to sublimate. He still has.) He doesn't like either altruists OR egoists, but he didn't say what he did like. Said he knows what a person is thinking and feeling by the way their muscles are composed - flexed or static. He often says, "I hate" and "I love" and very strongly. Never heard him say (yet) get rid of likes and dislikes. Once he said, "my mind not squeamish, but my body very squeamish." So evidently like and dislike of the emotions might mean only that center of the mind. (Remember 3 centers in each principle center.) I dare not ask any more questions since last night. Tell you that in a minute when I finish jotting down notes I made for you.

Nietzsche said, "I love the great despisers because they are the great adorers." So as you said the other day, like and dislike of great value in the art world.

Yesterday, Sunday, he sent for us to meet him at the Coupole. He bought for us (200 francs) caviar, vodka, Russian cold foods, and we all lunched in Katie's room with a reading afterward. Then he went away, drank Armagnac and was a little tight when we met him for dinner at Crayfish, where he spent more than 300 francs for a dinner we couldn't eat, and drank 2 bottles of Armagnac. Glad he did because we all got jumped on plenty, though Louise only for her dog. When tight, he uses merde in English every other word, calls everyone that, waiters too. Pretty hard to take but how one watches to learn.

Another dinner here again (hotel), but last night he did not bring the book but talked and that was a real miracle. But first, at dinner I had the misfortune - no, good fortune - to ask a question at the wrong moment, taking advantage I suppose, subconsciously, of the fact he was drunk. Well, the thunderbolt fell. He said, "Now you know your (- - - ill) - your sickness. It is curiosity - American curiosity. Always you want to know more and more without understanding what already I have say to you. For that you will die MERDE." Later (I had several tears escaping, could NOT help) he asked, "You angry?" I said, "No, it is true." So he tried to make me eat more and was as "tender" as ever through the evening. When he left he said, "Tonight you were

bitten by your flea. You be careful not to catch more fleas or you cannot sleep in your bed."

Well, at the hotel he talked to Gordon. He told her she had not much more time left, it is now or never. She must do something special now. "If you do not, merde you have been, merde you are and merde you will die, like a dog." He gave her a special exercise, the first of seven, that she is to do first. Think of the legs and try to imagine the emanations that flow from them. Then try to think you are holding them back so they will not escape. He told her to bring him 7 questions about this today to the café and advised her not to sleep all night. If she does as he tells her, he will know and tell her more. He said, "My telling you this, I have made myself an obligation to you and I must be your slave, at your service at any moment you command me. But if you do not, I have obligation to stop." Poor Gordon looked rigid with fear.

Then I heard something that for my type (curious - number 3 of the twelve types) was a revelation. He talked about emanations of all bodies. He said, "We emanate - an active function. It's a dirty process, as dirty as going to the toilet (he said, faire merde, in English). But sometimes there can be something else but dirt in emanations." I was holding my breath to hear what, but he looked at me and said, "No, that I not tell." What a shock I had to hear the words, "We emanate." The way he said them I felt an activity of emanation - it was like suddenly having a new function and I've been feeling it ever since. And this is something I heard, but not in an active sense - that we have emanations I knew, of course, but felt passive about it. Next he gave me another shock. He said the planet emanates. The air, the atmosphere about the earth is the emanation of the planet. He said, "Many more things like this I know but can never tell." So this must be an important clue to the real secret knowledge we can never hear. How important I can only judge by the terrific shock I had from it and a sort of new understanding. When he was at his tightest he was saying (had it been anyone else I would say boasting) that he could put a curse on anyone he wanted to curse - could make anyone die slowly of cancer in two years, etc. I wouldn't have any idea of his purpose at such moments.

Can't tell you what all this is like - I feel quite mad, but underneath an awful tragedy about myself and all other human beings. Can't see why he bothers about all of us worms.

Children have divine curiosity about an unborn world and ask questions. But about <u>this</u> unknown world (of our search) the curiosity "stinks" as he says. That means we have only mental curiosity? It certainly made him angry. He

won't leave the book between readings. He said, "Nothing like this in the world, someone might copy."

My reports can't begin to cover what is said, what happens. All beautiful status quo life gone under, no thought of cinemas, radio, . . . Puzzling moments for one who understands nothing - like wondering why an aware being knocks over same bottle put in same place by his elbow three times in succession, thus spilling favorite drink, Armagnac. Why after glass is filled he tilts it while talking (this always happens) so that favorite liquid spills over his coat and trousers. Is this a lesson for us in what not to do? We don't need it. Everyone was called merde last night except Louise of whom he takes no notice whatever. He's interested in Elaine - says she looks like his wife. He said to her, "Two things I like about you, three things I hate."

October 31, 1935

Gurdjieff when tight (yes, he was and said so) said other night he had 28 daughters - told about Edith Taylor, said never saw a woman who could drink so much. Said in old days he had a million, maybe 100 millions, more maybe, he said, in dollars, in Russia. He had 20 wives, each wife had 100 servants, horses, apartment, etc., including jewels. He also said he was greater than God, that sometimes God was unique merde. He must get tired testing us on his manifestations. We listen without minding anything.

Gordon asked where must center of gravity lie when she is trying to do this exercise. In mind or in leg? She came to a stop and wanted to know why. He said because too much mind. Must have attention instead - association of mind with association of feeling. Memory plus sensing makes attention. But feeling has two centers - solar plexus feeling plus spinal brain. Must not "philosophize" about it. Do with faith like monk. Not trying to know with the head but SURE-ing. She asked about length of time for doing this exercise. He said one third of waking state must be active - for active mentation or for functioning of the real I. One third active, one third actively relaxed, one third automatic living - body, I suppose he meant. Have three hours you know are free, do the exercise one hour. He said man has three worlds - the world of impressions which is the outer world, the inner world which is the totality of organ functioning, and three, the world of the soul which was called by the ancients the World of Man.

The leg exercise is for the mentation of inner world. He said just as the physical presence of man can arise, so can the soul world of man arise. He said between the physical world of man and the soul world there is an intermediate

state - the astral body. Didn't get this very well, neither did Katie. He told Gordon to do the exercise first when not in life (daily chores), later she could do it anywhere in life. When one begins to accumulate these emanations you will find there is a place in you waiting for them - like the place in a motor where power accumulates. When you accumulate these emanations, they will crystalize and you will have a force that does not pass from you like water.

That same night he told Louise she is psychic weak, and tapped his head. He calls Elaine, Mees Misunderstanding. Katie is Mees Premature (like a seven-months baby). He tells Katie often she is a cow staring at the barn door (because newly-painted the cow doesn't recognize it.) he told me I was a slave to functions but I don't know whether he meant that curiosity again or something else. He said, "I have thought of seven things for you (about you), one I tell you now: you have eye of suffering wolf." I thought he meant I was like a wolf. "He said, "No, only eye, very special thing. I have seen wolves, female wolves, attacked by herd, hungry, exhausted, bitten, in agony they turn look on me, look like in your eye." He has money now and is spending a fortune on us. I understand nothing except he must have his reasons.

November 1935

November 1 1935.

Gurdjieff telephoned at 6 last night, said he was coming at 9:30. You can't imagine how depleted we were from the day before, no one could hold herself in her chair. So of course that was the night he chose to make us read the book for 5 straight hours - he didn't leave till 3. I have never supported a strain like it in my life. Besides the vibrations chapter was so difficult, the "dog buried so deep," that I remember very little and probably that all wrong. What happened to me was not brain understanding but what I might call stretching of inner man - stirring in its sleep. I felt all organs moving up - in truth I had the most fundamental experience I have ever had in the method. No way of telling you more. I woke with it this morning (couldn't bear to read the Herald, even). Perhaps one feels like this in a state of hypnosis. Perhaps I am hypnotized by him, as well as by myself. I can't think of anything but him and his words and all shapes of thought-life have changed their forms. I don't know what he wants of us, but I sense that we are in test tubes now for something he wants to know about his book. He watched us last night as never before and the room was charged with his dynamo and our super-effort. Never have I known or

imagine such vibrations… It was really life without a body, though our bodies were in extremis.

I showed him the enclosed animal life in galoshes that Katie drew and he laughed. He said why didn't I tell him it was my birthday, he would have done something. You were idiot not to tell, he said, that only comes once a year. And now we old friends together all the time. I always made fête for my children at Prieuré.

Status quo postscript: Forgot to tell you the wife of Crayfish proprietor (who was at Prieuré) also has daughter by G. He says. She hates him as much as E.T. I see her face go white when he enters and leaves.

November 2, 1935

He called me last night - ordered a general round-up and we dined at the Greek's. But, my word, we got chicken soup chapter again, owing to the girls' having brought Frances to the Café de la Paix in the afternoon and he saying she could come last night. So there was nothing new - we read again till 2 - no not again, it's usually 3. Of course we had Jewish galoshes and dirty words all over again. I'm so used to stink and merde, etc. that I'll be saying them soon.

November 3 1935.

Another miracle last night. He came to dinner and said to me, " I think on you today. This evening for you - you hero of evening. I bring special chapter for you - too hard for others but they may listen." I made some notes at 3 this morning- will send later.

Found out what functions are I am slave to - in one of the chapters last night. Functions in this sense are the emotions - some chief features were listed with them - vanity, etc. Louise is in a state about the relation Gurdjieff and I have together. She cried and said, "How he understands me and (in certain places) I, him" he let me keep three chapters for today (I'm responsible for them, that no one copies) because he's away till tonight and because Louise goes to America and won't have these life-force meetings. He said to her, "Now you spoiled for American company over there." The chapter on Time. The Arch- Absurd chapter too - why sun gives neither light nor heat. He's going to start group here soon.

This is a worse obsession than being in love - in fact that feels too childish to remember. In fact it's the same thing for me - in another realm. He said he was in love with his first wife for 24 years - though he had other women.

November 5, 1935

More notes… they are getting more difficult to remember - but remembering better under his vibrational presence. I seem to go into state when I'm listening to the readings. The girls say he leans forward and watches me and hardly takes his eyes from my face and that if I knew how he was watching I never could keep my mind on the book. He glances at the others from time to time but fixes on me with intensity. That is what they tell me, I have not seen it because I do super-concentration. They tease me and call me call me teacher's pet.

Conscience is sometimes called the representative in us of the Creator.

Every real happiness for man can arise exclusively only from some unhappiness also real which he has already experienced.

The duality of man's general psyche is because of the split between "consciousness" (our perceptions in totality) and the subconscious" (normal localization). This daily process of his daily existence divides him into two independent personalities. Because of this division man lost the impulse necessary to three-brained beings - SINCERITY. So now the result is deceit. Parents teach this kind of conduct and call it education.

The foundation of the whole of man's essence has become the psyche properties cunning, envy, hate, hypocrisy, contempt, slyness, servility, ambition, double-facedness.

The 5 strivings for us:

1. Satisfy the needs of the body.
2. Constant unflagging instinctive need for self-perfection in the sense of Being.
3. Know more and more concerning the laws of world creation and world maintenance.
4. Pay for your arising and individuality as quickly as possible in order to lighten the sorrow of the Creator.
5. Assist the most rapid perfecting of other beings.

Being impulses that Gurdjieff judges you by: 1. attention, 2. impressionability, 3. alertness, 4. intensity, 5. sincerity.

The consequences of the properties of the organ Kundabuffer are: envy, self-love, vanity, ego, pride, conceit, swagger, "imagination", arrogance.

The great Being impulses no longer in us of faith, hope, love. The only function left in man to work on (a teacher to arouse) is that "sacred conscience" still surviving in his subconscious - which might gradually pass into the function of his ordinary consciousness.

Man's reason (as in "learned beings" - he means educated man, scientists etc.) is only the (- - ? - -) his subjective psyche.

People who wear pearls do so instinctively in order to offset the value of their inner-insignificance.

Water is the blood of the planet.

Blessed is he who has soul- and blessed is he who has not. But grief and sorrow to him who has in himself its conception (~~Meaning maybe the only sin against the Holy Ghost is not to develop when you have heard of it.~~)

THE THREE BRAINS

THE ACTIVE (Affirming) brain that is in the head.

THE PASSIVE (Denying) brain that is in the spinal column.

THE NEUTRALIZING brain which is localized in parts and called specific functioning. These separate functions are nevertheless connected with each other correspondingly so that the sum total of these scattered parts can function in general. The NERVE NODES make up this "BEING BRAIN." The totality of nerve nodes in the breast is called the solar plexus. Only the active and neutralizing forces serve the Trogoautoegocratic process. For the coating of our "I" only the crystallizations of the denying brain in spinal column can serve. So that the majority of people remain with the planetary body alone, do not develop and are destroyed forever when they die.

Wrong to kill animals. This only planet where beings kill each other (wars). All forms of beings actualize all together the form of the process required by our Creator for the existence of Everything Existing, the essences of all beings are to Him equally valuable. All beings are only parts of the existence of a whole essence spiritualized by Himself.

8th personal commandment: Love all that breathes. (He didn't say what others were). God forgives everything.

The stronger physically a man is, the weaker his brain - also for tall men. He said Elaine, Frances too tall for good brain. If women have long hair, too, he said, very short brain. Donkey stronger than horse because donkey more stupid.

Psyche stirrings are religion. He doesn't own a book- says ALL books are only written only on stolen ideas - each new book is replica of one already in a library.

Faith desirable - owing to faith alone appears in a being the self-consciousness necessary for him and also the valuation of Personal Being as of a particle of everything existing in the universe.

Louise had been in trouble with him for dog, inattention, talking, and to protect her and to hear HIM I made a gesture to stop her speaking when he was telling something important. He said to me with oh, such a twinkle, "Why do you stop her from manifesting?" We all had to laugh, he too.

Morning sun best for us, the only time of day when its rays contain certain properties necessary for our understanding. Chapter on astronomers amusing - they spend all their time gazing through telescopes and putting names to the spots of light they see. Too long about apes - in America - I'll tell you (just say American women). You've heard the THOUGHT TAPES. Every REAL thought from a conscious being remaining in the atmosphere of the planet as long as that planet survives and can be picked up in after ages by other conscious beings.

The informed beings of Atlantis, having being warned of the second catastrophe to the planet, scattered over the earth. After the catastrophe, they met again in Egypt. The pyramids and the Sphinx. Seven astronomers' tubes in the great pyramid. The Sphinx represents how to become conscious - body of a bull meaning mighty labours, lion's leg for the might necessary for development, the eagles' wings for pondering, the breast of a virgin for love - always, and the head FIXED WITH AMBER to the neck for impartial love. Amber is one of seven planetary formations in the arising of which all of its three separate independent and sacred parts are in equal proportion.

November 6, 1935. Remember how men define the "flow of time."

When the organ Kundabuffer was removed from them, they began to have the same length of life as all normal 3-brained beings in the universe. They should have existed until their second being body was completely coated in them and perfected by Reason up to a certain point. But they ceased

actualizing the sacred process (self-development) and in consequence the quality of their radiations failed to respond to the demands of the Trogoautoegocratic process. Then nature was compelled for the purpose of equalizing-vibrations to shorten their lives because of the principle upon which is actualized the length of life of one-brained and two-brained beings who have not the possibilities of three brained beings.

According to this principle, the length of being-existence and also the whole contents of their "I" ("common presences") are acquired from the results of seven actualizations:

1. Heredity in general
2. Conditions and environment at moment of conception
3. Combination of the radiations of all the planets of solar system during their formation in womb.
4. The degree of being-manifestation of parents until maturity.
5. The quality of being-existence similar to themselves around them
6. The quality of the thought waves formed in atmosphere while they are growing up - that is, good wishes and actions toward them from their family.
7. The quality of being-efforts of the person himself for the transubstantiation in himself of all the data for obtaining objective reason.

These things important, I gather through many pages of strange language, because in the three brains is given a definite quantity of associations of experiencings. All this is origin of the winding-up process in human beings that Jane talked about. The duration of existence of beings depends on the spring represented by these associations or experiencings formed in the three brains during youth. It means you can only go as far as the possibilities given you when young - tension of the winding. (In that case I must give up now - today. But I won't). A being can go on until associations and experiencings are used up, owing to the seven external conditions. Even if put in glass case, a man must die at age of one minute or 90 years according to this law. Watches have one spring - man has three: the thinking center, the feeling center, the moving center. He dies by thirds. A one-third death always for people called "representatives of art" in feeling center - also for altruists. One-third death in

thinking center for reader of books and newspapers. All this because we have not yet learned the cosmic law called Equalization-of-many-sourced-vibrations. There are human beings in Asia who know this secret and have lived 200, 300 and 400 years.

CHAPTER ON GREECE AND ROME

Hellas, Hellenis, comes from Greek word meaning fisherman which originally Greeks were. When too stormy to fish they gathered in shelters and invented games because they were bored. The first game was called Pouring-from-the-empty-into-the-Void. Then the game of Sciences and Mouse Trap. Almost one-half of the Egoplastikuri (being efforts) in the minds of men from which is formed "a being-world-outlook" are crystalized just from the "truths" invented in Greece by those bored fishermen.

Romans (shepherds from Rimk in Asia) invented games too - laws and sex depravity. They and the Greeks exchanged games when not engaged in mutual destruction of each other. Now today men spend, even with emotion, more than one-half their existence and being-energy in absorbing these two ideals of bored fishermen and shepherds.

Unfortunately contemporary Germany has in many respects surpassed the beings of ancient Greece. Their science has invented poison gasses, aniline dyes, cocaine (which has effect similar to that which the organ Kundabuffer had on the psyche of their ancestors). He writes against SPORTS as practiced in England. Chapter 28 against the Russian experiment, but placed in ancient times.

EXPLANATION OF HASNAMUS BEINGS.

There are four kinds. Only the third kind has possibility of being cleansed. The second kind is going down scale - born again as one or two-brained being. One planet, called Eternal Retribution (incredible sufferings) is for kinds 1, 2 and 4 Hasnamus-es. There are three small planets for the third class.

1. Remorse of Conscience
2. Repentance
3. Self-Approach.

Only 313 among the highest being bodies have ever reached the planet Retribution from the whole universe, two of which from this earth. The chief torture of the state of these highest being-bodies is that they must forever experience these terrifying sufferings fully conscious of the utter hopelessness of their cessation. (Sounds like the Christian hell to me).

(Fourth time he nods means: acknowledges with a nod for thanks.)

November 6, 1935.

Art is the chief source why the mind of man is step by step distorted - a harmful factor for the final atrophy of his thinking processes. The origin of art was to transmit knowledge. The wise men of old decided for the future good of man to use certain means of transmission - one was through the law of Sevenfoldness which exists on the planet and will forever. For instance in the white ray there are 7 colors; in every sound, 7 tones; in every state of man, 7 sensations; every form can be made up of only 7 different dimensions; every weight remains at rest on the planet due to 7 "reciprocal thrusts" etc. The initiates decided to create productions on the basis of the law of the seven and intentionally introduce certain also lawful inexactitudes and place in the inexactitudes the contents of some or other true knowledge. And for the key to those inexactitudes in the great Law, they should further make in the productions something like a Legominism, securing its transmission from generation to generation through initiates of a special kind, called initiates of art. Called art because the whole process of transmission of knowledge to remote generations through the Law of Sevenfoldness will not be natural but artificial.

(Also 7 days in the week - on Atlantis the names of the days of the week were: Monday, Adashsikra, Evosiàra, Cevorkiskra, Midosikra, Maikosikra and Soniasikra. (This interested me - imagine hearing the days of the week from a lost continent whose existence even is sometimes denied by those scientists.)

Gurdjieff explains at length that on Mondays the day was devoted to how to pass on knowledge of religious ceremonies, Tuesday architecture, then painting, religious dances, sculpture, the day of mysteries, temple and theatre, and Sunday, day of music and sound. Too long, the details. Then he tells definition of white ray of light which interested me. It is called "common integral vibration of all the sources of actualizing." Tonalities of colors that we distinguish by perceptions of impressions are called separate "blending of gravity center of vibrations."

The total of all separate interblendings of color is 5,764,801. Only a third of this number (exception one color which only can be seen by God) can be perceived by all ordinary beings on whatever planet they may be on. (Later 49 for earth beings, now?)

Every kind of definite formation (a body, a cosmic concentration) acquires the property, from evolving and involving processes, of producing various effects upon the sense perception of beings. A light ray is formed and consists of 7 "complexes of results"- "7 classes of vibrations" of those cosmic sources, the arising and further action of each of which also arise and depend on 7 further ones and so on up to the Sun Absolute. All together they compose the light rays of all the sources of the actualizing of everything existing in the whole of the Universe. When the white ray enters with its presence proper to it into the "sphere of possibilities" for its transformation in the presence of an Insapalnian planet (don't know what that means) then there proceeds in it also, just as in the case of every already "definitized" cosmic arising possessing the possibility of still further actualization, a cosmic process - that is, it remains as a presence, but it itself disintegrates and produces processes for evolution and involution by separate "gravity center vibrations" of its arising. And these processes are actualized thus: one of the gravity center vibrations is derived from others and is transformed into a third, etc.

During such transformations this white ray acts upon other ordinary processes proceeding nearby in intra-planetary and surplanetary arisings and decompositions and owing to Kindred-vibrations act dependently upon and in accordance with the surrounding conditions, blend and become part of the whole common presence of these definite inter-planetary or surplanetary formations.

Man's sight had so deteriorated that it could only perceive 343 different tonalities of color. In Babylonian epoch men suspected the deterioration of the sensibility of that organ of theirs and painters, in order to find out and elucidate the truth, decided to use only the tonalities existing between black and white. They used for their productions 1500 very definite shades of what is called the color gray. Other beings in Babylon, enthused by experiments of the painters, began also a new movement "to search the truth in the shades of smells obtained between the moment of the action of cold at freezing and the moment of the action at warm decomposition." They found about 700 very different shades of smell.

The painters of Babylon used the law of colors in their work, not in their order according to the scale, but with the also lawful "otherwises" in which they placed a content of information or knowledge. In the dances - every

posture and movement of every being in general, in accordance with the law of 7, always consists of seven “mutually balanced tensions” arising from 7 independent parts of their whole, and each of these 7 parts consists of 7 different “lines-of-movement” and each line has 7 “points of dynamic concentration.” And all this being repeated in the same way and in the same sequence but always on diminishing scale is actualized in the minutest sizes of the total bodies called atoms.

In sculpture - a law, also of 7 - the dimensions of any definite part of any whole being ensue from the 7 dimensions of other of his secondary parts which in their turn ensue from 7 tertiary parts, etc. Face of any being, a good example. The facial dimensions are the result of the dimensions of 7 different dimensions of the whole face. The dimensions of the nose are derived from the dimensions of the other part (s?) of the face and on this nose in turn are actualized 7 different surfaces which have also 7 lawful dimensions down to the atom itself of this face, which is one of the 7 independent dimensions composing the dimension of the whole planetary body. In the deviations from these lawful dimensions the sculptors indicated their information for posterity. Jane once explained the playing of roles in the plays - too long anyhow.

Our psyche a mix-up. Three kinds of association flowing, which evoke different kinds of being impulses. Three personalities which have nothing in common with each other. With one part of our essence we intend to wish one thing - at the same time with another part we wish something else. Thanks to the third part we already do something quite the contrary.

Music - it can evoke remorse. Also Joy, sorrow, religiousness. Also “the momentum-of-what-was-experiences” increases more intensively and the sequences of the impulses evoked for experiencing usually proceeds in an automatic order. The musicians of Babylon combined their melodies in such ways that the sequence of the vibrations of the sounds should evoke in the beings a sequence of associations and impulses for experiencings, not in the usual automatic order, but now in one brain, now in another, then in the third - or in all three together.

The word Artist (he who is occupied with art) came from the word Orpheist (he who rightly senses the essence). You can imagine what Gurdjieff says of latter-day art.

Then men used 351 definite consonants. Later when all his faculties deteriorated, he used only 77 (Babylonian period) and 5 centuries later only 36. Man’s “ableness- to- pronounce” deteriorated with the increase of his “wiseacring.” A long philological chapter which fascinated me because well, never mind. 20 pages too long.

Then long and very very funny pages on the modern theatre and playwrights, AND actors. I laughed so hard I am aching. He says in point of their genuine essences, they are almost nonentities.

He says only 4 great initiates left in "immediate line of inheritance" who have keys to the understanding of ancient art. One is among the Redskins living in America; one is a being of the Phillipine Islands; one is from Asia and one is an Eskimo.

Last night we read from 8:30 to 3 a.m. without a break and part was about his early life. Will remember to tell you.

What does this mean? He turned to Katie and said (2 nights ago) "You and others can thank her (pointing to me) that you hear these chapters. Thank her objectively". It can't be the little money I gave him. Katie gave him more than I.

Your questions

World of impressions is the outer world—everything that happens to us from the outside. The world called inner—totality of organ functioning - and the world of the soul which the ancients called the (real) World of Man. I think you cannot divide these into physical, mental, emotional, as strictly as we usually classify. I cannot explain about higher sex but should think the soul state certainly was not only that. I thought it was means for attainment of soul state. I'm not to be trusted here - definitely not. It might be those three divisions above the Egyptian key - which in totality could be soul world- you know, planetary body, body of the spirit, body of the soul. He has repeatedly said, "emanations" for our bodies. Also for the OTHER planets (I am a planet walking on a planet). He has used "radiations" for light. Emanations certainly ARE material. But in them is something else sometimes, he said. But did not explain. What do radiations "go through" you ask? Well the same "ether" that is the fabric of all the universe, I should say, the ether that penetrates all space and all matter.

G says he won't see Alice. He's given up all hope now of Elaine and Frances. If he were in status quo I would say he fell rather hard for Elaine. Said once he had sculpted someone just like her and that she looks like his wife. She was really touched by G, says she can never live again as in the past. Frances, too, touched. Nancy no - just an "interesting" man for her whom she'd like to ask out to dinner with me!! Did, too, and was refused. Janet better - though she says, "When is that damned Asiatic bugger going away?" He plans to write on for 2 months, finish tenth and last book, then start classes. We'll never see him

alone then - only from a distance. As he said, “This is accident.” We’re in Second Series now - he said hardly anyone has seen it.

November 8, 1935.

Last night we began the 28 portraits - Second Series. “My Father”, “My First Tutor” and Bogaslovsky, second tutor. His father, once rich, became a carpenter - very wise old man - a story-teller bard - fulfilled those educational conditions for a child (yesterday’s notes). So beautifully written - I cried at end. This is the epitaph Gurdjieff composed for father’s grave:

I am thou

Thou art I

He is ours

We both are his

And all will be

For our neighbors

More tomorrow. I feel as if I were in some supplementary college cramming for examinations and doing four years’ work in one. Of all I’ve written you it is perhaps one thousandth part of what I’ve taken in. Soon will all be over - but life will be changed forever.

November 9, 1935.

A meeting last night. He came early, just as I was going to dinner. So I had none and “entertained” him while waiting for the others. Frances came first and he said something she didn’t like. I saw a very mean expression on her face and feared the worst. He told her she was hopeless, she was empty and would always be, she had no brain, no possibilities of being. Then he asked her to read. In three minutes he took away the book, called her an idiot (the poor girl had been practicing reading, too, in case he ever asked her) and made me read. I hoped he wouldn’t be too “tender” with me because of what had happened to her, but he was, stopped between paragraphs to explain things - which he never does - until the others came.

Last night we had more portraits - a boyhood friend, first, with whom he was when he copied the map of the pre-sands Egypt; a Russian prince who was also interested in Egyptian secrets, and also a remarkable woman, Mme.

Vicays (?) who put him onto some music secrets, etc. Through all the portraits of others runs his autobiography. Such a richness of knowledge, such humor, observation, resource, purpose and formulation as no one has ever read from one man. He can pronounce 400 consonants - we, about 36. He said the sound-producing organs in man are more important than his eyes. Americans are the worst nation for sound-producing.

Our solar systems situated "even almost beyond" the immediate emanations of the sun absolute.

The rise and fall of civilizations depends only on from what part of the surface of the planet, in co-relation with the harmonious movement of the whole of our solar system, there is required at the given period for purposes of Trogoautoegocrat process, more of those vibrations arising either from their radiation-ness or from the process of the Raskooarno proceeding with them. (Don't know meaning of word or the process). He excoriates the number of languages used on earth. He says this comparatively petty planet with a petty "half dead terra firma" continues to remain "a 1000- tongued hydra."

Pages about doctors (against) and cheating activities of pharmacists.

He said that love was man's most unbecoming state. We've heard that. "When everything is ashes in your hands, there is a clearer feeling."

(Havre)

November 10, 1935.

Last night Frances and I went to café, to Gurdjieff, to return chapter. He (nor we) not one cent but he took us to Crayfish and charged it; first telephoning to be sure the patronne was not there. I think of everything here that has passed that is past - and in spite of unbearable pain I know something else and better - more difficult and more adult. How I hate that word that takes from me the emotions that I may not enjoy but must use for a basis and a tool. Gurdjieff said he hated everyone, loved no one, but for three things: those who tell good anecdotes, those who like Armagnac, those who make (how say it) loud bathroom noise (like a warning to run away).

November 12 1935. Café de la Paix

Gurdjieff at table across room writing. It was incredible last night - Alice saying such things to Gurdjieff that I thought he would kill her. He said so much I cannot remember. He's going to make me a special program for my

development tomorrow and of course you will guess what that means to me now.

November 15, 1935

I don't know what he sees in me. He told me yesterday I was badly organized, too much here, too little there, one place empty, good physical, fourth center wrong (sex). He sees I don't respond to the male principle. He is going to give me piqûres against my nightmares, neurasthenia and anemia. When I am "calmed" from these, he will give me the first initiate exercise. No, no mention of a child. I'm beyond the time for that - he even told Louise to give up her dog.

A few details - our third food, impressions. He says our third food consists in the radiations from the sun absolute and the emanations from the planets in our solar system.

Interesting about hypnotism. Because of the consequences in us of the maleficent organ Kundabuffer we are already hypnotized. So that all a hypnotist has to do is to bring together in one place, concentrated, the states of our general hypnosis.

Last night we read chapter on religion - the five religions - Buddhist, Hebrew, Christian, Mohammedan and Lamist. Moses was a real being sent from above. The resurrection of Jesus Christ explained by appearance of astral body - I mean materialization. If an initiate (Jesus was an Essence initiate) dies without having communicated all his teaching, his astral body may return to earth for a short time and give his final instructions or it may be called back to earth by another high initiate on condition that the second has taken the precaution before the first man's death to coat his own higher body with a particle of the same (similar?) higher body (of the Spirit) of the first man who has died. The higher body (of the spirit) of the first man who has died. The living man can establish a connection with the dead by projecting his astral body connected to himself by a cord whose thickness depends on its distance from him. It mounts (the astral body) until it finds its place of gravity in the upper atmosphere and there it communicates with the dead man's BODY OF REASON (of which the time is limited to the completion of a solar revolution). This might be a year or a day, according to when the revolution is due to be completed after his death. Or at least I so understand this.

This is the explanation of the "resurrection" of Jesus and his appearance. Gurdjieff has no patience with Christians - being "saved" by Jesus, praying and making no being effort of their own. They are all lost forever.

He gave a picture of one kind of hell - he said Elaine's hell - where all souls sit in cesspool up to their mouths. They must sit still for at the slightest movement of one of them the lake goes into movement and liquid goes into their mouths. So whenever a newcomer approaches all the souls call to him, get in gently please, be slow and careful. Once a year to commemorate Jesus a great stone is thrown into the lake and all receive the liquid in their mouths. He wrote about the Judas story - how Judas was one of the most loving and devoted disciples who had to fulfill an objective duty to the plan and was therefore cursed ever since by the world.

Frances and I had lunch with him in his room Wed. and read the book - I did. She went first. When he said goodbye to me he put his arm around me and kissed on the forehead like a daughter and said, "I'm making something for you. You got very holy and devout feelings. That night he took us all to Crayfish, inviting Janet too. To my astonishment she went, behaved very well and respectfully, said, "Yes, sir" as I often do too, but was ill all night from his food. He tried to make her find the roots of words but she couldn't. He knows more English than she or I do, though cannot speak fluently. But much better than before… Last night was comic relief at dinner. Katie, Elaine and I went to Café. Elaine became angry at the picture of hell he gave her to sit in, she left the table, he sent Katie into street after her to stop her getting into taxi, then went out himself, brick red, to stop her. She ordered the cab to start as his foot was on running-board, he was left half in and half out, was nearly knocked down by the light post on the corner, stopped the cab and her running off, then came back to get me and scattered belongings. I was trembling but did not look at him or seem to notice his state. He told her she was his wife, his child , God knows what. Her story of their last hour in private I will not repeat.

Then we went to dinner at an Armenian place. After to room there which Katie no longer has. He talked to me about Elaine, tried to find out her private life. I said I knew nothing, of course. He said "three times in my life I have known type like her - my wife, before her another, and now this one. Only my wife changed inside. "Very interested type your friend." I have to write to Gordon today for him - to order special kind of cigarettes from London that Elaine likes… Today he says he finishes the last chapter of the series of ten books. So we celebrate that tonight. Then he says, " I no drink no more."

November 16 or 23, 1935.

At 3 to Gurdjieff's new apartment for another lunch (with Gordon) and my piqûre.

November 17, 1935.

The sun absolute, the source of all, has emanations. These collect and form all other suns (stars to you). The emanations of these suns form to make the planets.

We die two deaths. Body first, then the body of the spirit (which holds the body of the soul) goes into dissolution and releases the "soul" which goes to the place destined for it, according to its category.

The chapter on the planet purgatory I could not possibly reproduce for you - one of the hardest - THE hardest. States without explaining the law of 3 and 7 and how they work together. This chapter explains the creation of the cosmos from the will actualized of the sun absolute. This creation changed His Unique Endlessness from autocratic to Trogoautoegocrat. The only true saying man has in any of his religious is that we are made in the image of God. Everything a replica down to microcosms. Food chart in this chapter too. For the first time, he taught directly. With pencil and paper he drew a piano keyboard and showed us where the two shocks came in. Chapter told about use of sex for development but did not describe self-observation. He railed against monks, fat and thin ones.

Planet purgatory is the most beautiful one in universe. Higher beings are sent there to be purified of certain substances whose presence in them is no fault of their own. When done, they return to the sun absolute to enjoy highest bliss.

He asked me to come at noon yesterday for my first piqûre which he did so skillfully that I felt nothing. He gave me my first task - something to do every half hour and which he said I would not remember more than the third time. When I saw him at half-past 7 I had not forgotten even once, remembered every time until I left him at 12, awoke in the night and remembered and all today have not failed. He said very good last night, then laughed and said, "if so hot at first, afraid later will be cold. But I won't because it really hasn't been hard at all compared with what I had expected. He asked me to give my word for the task but I did not dare, for forgetting once out of a hundred is breaking your word. Another piqûre tomorrow. Forgot to tell you he had Lily Galumium take an X-ray of Elaine's insides when she didn't even know it in the Café de la Paix but E. had on an enormous buckle of metal so it spoiled the plate and (he said) cost him 2000 francs. If he could have a weakness, I'd say it was for women. Finally saw a movie, but mind was on those half-hour intervals.

November 18, 1935.

Piqûre at noon. Feel better - or so I think. Can think only of G and try to do my intentional suffering. I haven't forgotten once - though have been late three times. Every half hour is rather hard. Today went over ALL the old notes which have just as many mistakes as Jane said. In fact they are so infantile that I ought to re-do them all and really have a base for reference.

November 20 1935.

Piqûres - a standard anemia and neurasthenia product that he sends to Germany for, the best in the world (known too). I feel stronger. Both G and Dr Wolfe asked what shock I had three years ago, but I didn't tell them. It's in my hand. Also that I'll never again have an important personal emotion. Tant mieux - I knew it already.

November 20 1935.

Very amusing last night. Gordon came to the Crayfish dinner that Alice gave. She said, "Have you been seeing Gurdjieff. I said "Yes, every day, sometimes twice. Today we've been with him since noon." With a red face she said, "That's a lie" Alice said "Yes, Miss Gordon, we were", in great surprise. At table he jumped on me for a Greek root - for not knowing it - and she looked very pleased.

Correct impressions octave: do, intentional suffering, re participation, mi, experiment, fa roles, sol elevation, la universality, and si individuality.

I remember this phrase from the book: "the vibrations of his radiations in relation to mine."

"Don't sit too long where you must not sit"

The nearest solar system to ours is called " Baleaooto." It has a comet Solni that influences us. The tension of planets on us causes a feeling of religion - a "being feeling" (some people call it nerves - that feeling). But due to "self-calming" instead of coating our second body (which results from remorse of conscience and in consciousness) beings feel a "need of freedom." This is the cause of Bolshevism - which by the way is not a new destruction but often happened in Egypt because that part of surface of the planet during long periods of time found itself in relation to the common-cosmic-harmonious movement in the position of the center- of-gravity radiations. That is why the influence of the cosmic law Solioonensius often acted on man abnormally.

Why were there 24 dynasties in Egypt? Between dynasties there were such perturbations as could make Russia's seem mere child's play. Beings manifest against one of themselves ruling as if it were his fault and not an accident. Chief particularity of the beings of planet earth is "periodic-reciprocal-destruction" - when this terrifying process begins, good customs and "automatic habits" acquired over centuries are destroyed and new ones substituted that have nothing to do with the community involved - so are good only "for a day."

Suggestibility is a maleficent property of our psyche. (Gurdjieff should be glad, by the way. What I have done to get all these women there for him every night for readings they don't understand when they want to go to a cinema or to bed).

November 24, 1935.

So you are surprised he runs after women in taxis? Gordon wasn't Friday night when he did it again. She just says, " one never pays any attention to those things or tries to understand". No, I don't understand why a conscious being under an emotion forgets a number three times I have just told him and has to return from the street to the café table to ask and re-ask a two-digit number. Or why he complains of indigestion and "gas" every day and can't cure a cough after a month. Or even when alone (and it's not to give anyone a shock) he puts food and brandy in his beard and all over his clothes. Or why when tight he pounds his stomach and says, "I am God's heir." (Perhaps he is, all I know.)

No, he has never spoken of self-observation, only continuous effort and intentional suffering. The exercise he gave me was to remember myself and prove it by a certain gesture every half hour. I have forgotten several times now - seven maybe - in nine days. He moved from the Grand Hotel to an apartment, 11 rue de Labie - he cooks the food himself - reeking of garlic and onions, it is - and the guests put 15 francs in the kitchen box and help wash the dishes. He made Katie a "kitchen boy" but so far has not asked me any such service. Gordon was filled with jealousy about me seeing him all the time. She's always ready to be mad. I'd be so happy for every new person to be there with us, wouldn't you?

… He did everything a man could think of to get Elaine, but he made her too nervous. She was afraid he was trying to hypnotize her and began to tremble finally at the mention of his name. She won't see him any more at all.

November 24 1935. Explanation - exposition, rather - of the

Creation of the Universe

(Copied by Louise directly from Gurdjieff's ms)

The Sun Absolute, where He existed, was gradually diminishing, owing to Time. The Sun Absolute had in itself, for its existence, only an independent force, the Autoegocrat, depending on nothing external. This force was formed of two laws: the law of Three-foldness and the law of Eftologodiksis (constantly evolving and involving in itself.) Through his will, God created a third force making the Autoegocrat Trogoautoegocratic, that is, dependent upon forces coming from the outside. He created these outside forces by directing the laws of Triamonia (Three-foldness) and Eftologodiksis from within the sun Absolute to without and from this resulted what is now called the Word of God - or Emanation. He created from these emanations (from the Sun Absolute) certain fixed points. These gradually became suns (stars) - Absolutes of the second grade. (Next time you look at the sun you can think you are looking at an object that was once contained in the sun absolute. I did today - thrilling experience). These in turn began to emanate. "The emanations of the Absolute of the second grade having been established, everything thereafter was created without the will of our Creator taking part in it - through the law of Triamonia and Eftologodiksis."

"Trogoautoegocrat was established in the universe and all the cosmoses began to maintain the existence of each other by reciprocal feeding - a constant equilibrium was established which now deprives the Heropass (Time) of doing anything unexpected to the Sun Absolute."

The Megalocosmos consists of Seven Cosmoses:

1. Protocosmos - the Sun Absolute itself.
2. Macrocosmos - all the newly-created suns together.
3. Defterocosmos - each newly created sun individually.
4. Messacosmos - the third-grade suns, called planets.
5. Microcosmoses - those smallest similarities of the Megalocosmos (which is the Seven cosmoses) which are found on the planets.
6. Tritacosmoses - those forms accumulating from the Microcosmoses i.e. those beings which inhabit the planets.
7.

A description of how God, “to create a certain help for himself from those Tritacosmoses (beings), began to organize in certain planets conditions of such possibilities for beings that among them in a certain manner of existence, in their bodies, formed of microcosmoses, (atoms, surely I suppose), another body could also be formed of similar shape, but from the substances of a higher rate of vibrations.” Then afterward a formation of the third body, body of the soul.

(Then how our second and third bodies are formed and improved). “Our organization and functions are similar to the Megalocosmos (universe) in everything, down to the tiniest trifle in every detail.”

For the Megalocosmos, Triamonia is formed as follows: emanations of Protocosmos (Sun Absolute) are positive; of the Defteroscosmos (each newly-created sun) are negative; and all the creations of the universe are the neutralizing force.

In beings, the Triamonia is formed by the substances of the head brain (positive), the spinal brain (denying or negative) and the accumulated results in the nervous nodes of the trunk (solar plexus) neutralizing.

Only the beings of Atlantis knew how to use our second third foods air and impressions, and had begun to put this knowledge into practice. All the substances of the universe are divided into three kinds.

(end of Louise’s notes)

The title of the chapter on good and evil is “Beelzebub explains that Justice is Man’s Most Accursed Mirage.” He says that one can do more work than anyone else and still be sent to punishment because you are not BORN with the possibility. This depends on accident or good wishes of the people around you. Not on merit.

Beelzebub’s grandson weeps for this injustice. I should think anyone would, it’s too terrible to ponder upon. Why should God be so unjust? Of course, though, since there is no good or evil there is no justice either. A law of God - after all it was his idea. Well, I can see it at least, but it is not “of my nature” as my niece says.

November 25, 1935.

Just back from luncheon along with G at his apartment and had piqûre. He talked a lot to me today. Told me that the exercise he had given me was to

instill in me a new kind of data I would need for what is to come later. I told him I had been emotionally upset like the "lop-sided" being I am, but that last night something had happened. I had had a vision of the Kundabuffer in the night. I told him what I had found out what it was and what it had contained. And what physical organ man had lost. He said YES. I call it "vision" because it was like clear seeing, but after I had "seen" I actively mentated to find out what. Now what I want to know is why. He didn't tell me that but said he would give me his writing on this subject. My reward - the Good and Evil chapter. He said after I had read it I could read it to Elaine and to Katie and Frances too. Then my reward was two-fold - I might read again myself alone.

Good & Evil Chapter - pp. 34-38

December 1935

December 2 1935.

I go out in the morning and get in also in the morning from that far-off flat of Gurdjieff's. Have been with him since 11, now home for 2 hours, then back again. I read MS. alone there today for two hours after my piqûre while he was preparing lunch and talking to Russians. A scientific chapter which you would not understand unless you had studied science and optics and chemistry. Revelations for me. Found out that the cause of portions of the continent having been buried under sands at one time and under snow and ice another time (the three ice ages, as they are known to geologists) was the moon and the forming of the moon's atmosphere which produced great winds on the planet earth which in turn caused the sand storms and also the great falling of snow. This was when the mammoths, buried alive in snow, disappeared from the globe - always a mystery to scientists.

The secret I discovered in the night was that man used to have a TAIL. In this tail was the continuation of the spinal column containing part of man's "denying" brain, so necessary for our development. The Kundabuffer was at beginning of tail. I misstated to you I had found out what Kundabuffer was in itself, because in my excitement I asked about both at once, thinking he said in reply that Kundabuffer was the tail. Later I understood that it was not tail but IN tail, beginning of tail. So I only found out by myself that man had tail with part of the brain in it - which I think is pretty good.

Today he said I was one-third cured - two more to go. He has promised to teach me himself in the method after I have had the necessary number of piqûres for my blood plasm and nerves. But he said I must be content to begin simply and not try to understand the most advanced questions in his books - but of course I have to, for that is my curse.

In Good and Evil chapter he said (after we had read it) that men had never seen angels in the world, but always thought they had seen devils. The more "good" they thought they were, the more devils they could see, seeing devils where a really good person did not. He said "The only devil in us is self-calming." WHAT would be think of you and Elspeth?

I made Elaine ask if man result of evolution from animals and he said, "No - man is different formula."

The three (what can I call them?) in the world that obey exactly the law of seven with its seven subjective characteristics, each of which when taken separately contain seven, each of which again contain seven, ad infinitum, are OPIUM (it has 7 crystallizations), the WHITE RAY (light), and SOUND. There are 20 pages of chemistry that go with this. Of the seven standards - never mind, names of chemicals. Of the 400 active elements which were anciently known of opium, man knows now but 42.

Pages of experiments and description of instruments for the purpose, having to do with passing the white ray of light through opium, notes of sound and rays of light on each other and opium, too - all proving their unity in the one fundamental cosmic law of seven, "Higher vibrations determine the direction of the lower vibrations in the "transitory-cosmic-results"." I learned that by heart from the book. (Hydrogen, fluorine, chlorine, bromine, iodine and two others) lost to man. Also learned this by heart for a reason.

He says he knows how to restore gray hair to its natural color without use of dye.

I feel much better; look less gray for color of face and not so many nightmares.

The more I hear and read in his books, the more I know I know nothing yet about the universe. I sometimes get a vision of the things I can never understand and nearly go mad trying to discover their relation to what I do know. Useless. I haven't the mathematics. It's as stupendous as the spaciousness of space. If I hadn't had the foundations from Jane all those years I would have understood nothing whatsoever…

Gordon was there today for lunch. We are very friendly now. All she needs to be nice is to have certain vanities protected - all to do with her POSITION with Gurdjieff in the method. So my adjustment was more than simple to make. Yet after all these years she understands just nothing at all about his books - doesn't even remember the toasts in order and he rebuked her for mistakes. He stopped drinking three days ago. From 1 to 4 bottles of brandy a day he cut off everything. Had several crises and fell down twice in the street. No time for cinemas, radio - where is our beautiful status quo? Then life was what G calls, when he wants to be amusing "all roses, roses" or "spring days". Now the nightly readings are over, I'm the only one he has kept for seeing daily, for teaching. In fact, the only one of all the people, he sees, Russians, French, and English. This isn't boasting, it's a fact. I can't account for it - maybe I'm the guinea pig he needs. What I'm learning. My head feels as if it were growing. Never did I think I would have such an opportunity. I scarcely ever have a drink any more. Not only because he asked me not to, but because I don't want it.

December 3, 1935.

Gurdjieff in black moods. Money difficulties. He didn't turn up last night for an engagement with me. I dined with Gordon - had a sympathetic talk. She is now with me instead of what she was when she came - was not too bad at all last night. G. is going to give her piqûres too.

December 6, 1935.

Just back from G. Had the idea to learn Russian and began yesterday. But G. was very angry today. "Idiot, you waste time idiot language while I your future prepare. You already late your future - now this important time, you must idiot language make. Svolosh." Then at home he said, "I know you give me all your heart. Soon you must decide if all give up in world." Oh heavens what shall I do? Can't give up memories - or my life with Janet - she's the only family I ever had. I felt this coming - that's why I had to know your plans. Although I can scarcely ever be with you I always hope ("hope of the emotions" - yes, I know.) Well I have always followed my strongest instinct. I can't tear myself apart anymore. I'll just wait and what happens. It's all decided now anyway, though not revealed to me yet. How can I not choose him?

Janet doesn't know I'm alive - we can't help each other - only make a home for Kundabuffers. And now she will be away for 3 months - good time

for a break. Perhaps it's only self pity, but I'm always very "lonely" - except with him. And unhappy of course. Which I don't mind. What do you and Georgette think? I don't even know yet what he wants me to do, so that's a silly question. I'm thinking out loud. If I were the sort of person who easily attached herself to everything that comes along, it would be different. But I've only had two - and both have gone in other ways. And now G who can't live forever but who would give me the greatest, if "loneliest" things. He is so good to me - why? He cooks my food, serves me, gives me piqûres and talks and talks. Again why? This epoch is full of mystery…he began another kind of piqûre today. Everyone says I look better. I feel a little odd, but all right. The organs are adjusting themselves to new chemistries, he says.

A note (in scale) is a center of gravity. The note Sol is the center of gravity of the octave.

Forgive "hysterical" outpouring. Help me about deciding future - you and Georgette. From all points of view - except sentimental. I'm not afraid - only aghast at my strong anchors to status quo. Just as Jane always accused me of being. But not much Kundabuffer because all my waking hours now are effort.

"What falls from the wagon is lost"- Gurdjieff.

December 9, 1935.

Thank you and thank you. Of course I am a child emotionally. I look for a parent. (Well, Georgette looks for fathers and you for mothers and grandmothers). Also I have not played my emotions properly and he says it makes me lop-sided. I regret it; I deplore every "affolée" emotion. I hate having made such an ass of myself in meetings, God knows. (The only state I should regret more would be the condition of Janet and Noel at meetings). Perhaps G. will never put the question, as you say literally. But he may go away in a month and there is the question just the same. Yes, I understand why Georgette was shocked about the Russian.

Explanation: we had been reading in the autobiographical part of his book how "at that time I knew only 18 languages" and how on a sea trip "I made it a task to learn 20 words of English a day", and "while waiting at the monastery three days to see the old man, I sat by the waterfall all day and learned the Kurd dialect" and "better to study a new language in spare moments than let the brain have an association," etc. so I thought (since I spend nearly two hours a day now on buses, I could learn 20 words at least a

day and speak in 6 months. Alas. Well, I learned several before he stopped me and I like to know them too. But no more of this idiocy.

Lunched and dined there yesterday. Couldn't get anything but his presence as everything was in Russian which he speaks freely with people. Can't bear to miss anything he says, naturally. At night I took Alice and Katie to the café, hoping he'd ask them too (I was expected) and he did, but had caught a cold and after dinner he went to bed and left us a chapter to read - one I had read twice, but Alice hadn't heard - his adventures in Asia. Today I'm keeping out of his way, its rent day and God help anyone who approaches when he must have money, for he speaks of nothing else and it makes me nervous. I forgot to tell you that one day he said, "Love is a very dirty thing." I didn't like that much. "Sex is good and love is dirty." Values to be changed. He's right, of course, but I'll have to be wrong for yet some time.

December 12, 1935. Café de la paix

Waiting for "him" to finish an interview - then I go with him to flat for piqûre and luncheon and read a chapter alone. Last night we dined there (Alice, Katie and Frances) and read till midnight. Have a definition of WILL (our next note in the scale) which I'll type tonight. I couldn't let "him" pay for all the expensive medicine for me when he is desperate for money for rent and food - he never asked me for it but I suppose he knew he didn't have to. I asked him the cost. At least one element very expensive I know. Had your letter about the marvelous music you heard. Oh dear - how I miss it in one way: I mean, oh God.

December 12, 1935.

… He went out from flat leaving me the chapter so I had a chance (NOT to be a donkey) to copy a definition of memory and also be sure that the definition of WILL I learned by heart last night was correct. Could have copied more but five men came to lunch. I was the only woman but didn't even care. Didn't even know they were there. I was so full of the chapter which was 60 odd pages long and I had to concentrate with speed to finish.

"Will is a certain combination obtained from the results of certain properties specially elaborated in themselves by people who can do." (Someone-who-can-do is a real man - man without quotation marks.) This means the kind of will obtained from intentional suffering. All other will, so-called, he says is the "resultant of desires" only.

Yes, “three babies.” I wanted so to write this the other day when you wrote “immature” to me. I wanted to say, “Well, of all the babies - and immature two adults I have ever known in some ways, it is you and Georgette”. Then I analyzed where you were and how and how differently I was and why. I am completely immature only in a negative emotion. That is true, if you will analyze. That is the strong point you two have - you are more mature in negative emotions than practically anyone. In positive emotions, I have sat aside, mature, while you have leaked energy all over the place on impossible plans and beliefs and stupid hopes and ecstasy in the vide. In anything about life and people that requires judgement you are both immature, and I am not - or so I feel and have proved to myself. Georgette is such a baby that often I have wanted to carry her across the room like one. And you - are you not even called “Baby”? And why do you call me that? Because you of all people in the world have been given the spectacle of all my negative emotions… As for Gurdjieff, he tried to give me one but could not. Somehow, I could have only one with him - if he should send me away. I suppose grief is a negative emotion?

Here is something important I never even heard hinted before. The only connection our emotions have with our body is through the BLOOD. And the emotions can only be connected with the mind by what he calls Hanbledzoin - that substance which arises from being-efforts; like self-observation, intentional suffering, standing manifestations. He points out how unbecoming is the state of man - he cannot by his mind control an emotion. What was life and death last year is hardly remembered. (Oh no, not always, may I add, for myself.)

MEMORY. “The repetition of previously perceived impressions engendering what is called association, and the parts of this repetition entering the field of man’s attention - that condition is termed memory.”

“The sensing of flow-of-time is directly proportional to the quality and quantity of the flow-of-thoughts.”

We have four personalities. I can’t remember the marvelous details of this - four pages long - I can only name them. The first is all automatic functions, including “mentation”, so-called of man. The second, the totality of the fixed data received from the six receiving organs, receivers of the varied quality vibrations depending on heredity and conditions in preparatory years of formation. Third, the fundamental functioning of the organism and also the motor-reflex-reciprocally-affecting-manifestation. The fourth, the three altogether which total is called the “I”

December 18, 1935.

I told G. I had to go away for an article. “How long?” “Four or five days.” “Well, three days all right, but I must know when exactly you go and come back.”

December 27, 1935.

Everything wonderful - he welcomed me with open arms and kissed me.

December 28, 1935.

At noon I telephoned his apartment. “Oh, you, canary, where you been, when you come back? Come at once here.” I asked, “With others?” “No, alone now. Tell them later come.” I told them and went, but Gordon was already preparing to follow quickly, afraid to miss anything. He met me at the door and kissed me on both cheeks and led me to a chair and we sat down and talked. He told me all the news, everything that he had done while I was away, showed me the children’s tree - a sad scraggly too tall object, put up anyhow, with a few silver streamers and envelopes pinned on the branches. Asked about my health and what I had done. “And now back.” “Yes, and happy to see you again, Mr. Gurdjieff.” “Ach, happy must not be. Happy is psychopathic.” In less than 10 minutes Gordon arrived. He then took me into the laboratory, talked while he prepared and gave me piqûre. Then I told him he was so busy I would not stay to lunch. He had 4 children, 2 mothers, a few men, Gordon and lunch 2 hours away. He said alright, yes, he would be busy, no time for anything, for me to come to lunch tomorrow. So I continued to be psychopathically happy (to see him) on a bus in the spring sunshine. Katie and Alice saw him only once while I was away. _ _ _ _ _

December 29, 1935.

Gurdjieff was “charming” today. Talked nearly an hour to me. I have only one more piqûre, a “pause” then 6 more, and finished. In the pause I’m to have a special diet for “quality blood”. Tuesday he gives me my second initiate task. He said, “Your psychopathic much better, nearly cured.” He spoke of future étapes as settled - so I know he’s not going to give me up. I would not know what to do if he did. I would die. All my subjective longings are bound to be unfilled in another human being because I can’t call forth what I give. But objectively I seem to do better. The more I love Gurdjieff the more he does for

me. I forgot to tell you he put me back on my half-hour task until Tuesday. The tree had a string of lights today. He lit it and closed the curtains to show me. Then he told me about the two children there - Nicolai and Michel. He's proud of them, if I may so interpret his words and eyes. He said, "When you cured you feel so good you will go and dance." I said, "No, I'll come ask for still more tasks." He came over and put his hand on my arm and smiled as he can and said, "Good."

December 30, 1935. Stopped on 19th piqûre. (Met him of 19th of my month) … just came in - 3 o'clock. A complicated piqûre - quite deep and painful - new compilation for the assimilation of all the chemicals he has been giving my blood. Takes 24 hours for the process. He wouldn't give me my new task today or my diet. I must go tomorrow ("first day of year, will wish you good things."). He told me today never to say "in the world" that he is teacher and I pupil. Said, "I used to be also idiot but finished when my accident. Now I writer and you reader. If I special thing for you do, you not speak. You not pupil - you a weakness." He laughed and held my hand twice and explained about symptoms I might have from medicine. Not to be frightened but telephone if anything makes me afraid. (as if it could)…. Yes, I'm beginning to have symptoms - I hear beautiful church music in my head and feel I can see you across all that long country… Best of all - he promised me Third Series - to read - later!!! Every time I go to that man some miracle happens to me.

January 1936

January 2, 1936.

My last piqûre, the 31st, on last day of the year. He said he would not give me the exercise until the following day, because it was necessary that the last, a different kind, should cause an assimilation of former substances that would take 24 hours and if he gave me a new task then, I might receive it psychopathically. I felt it working all afternoon and evening, an odd variety of sensations… G. had invited me to lunch on New Year's Day. Katie went to see him in the café. I joined her there. He invited her too, "but without thin one." Gordon also came. Quite an onion lunch and no conversation worth quoting. Afterward he called me in his room and said, "Now I full of food, you too, so will not tell task now. Come to me tonight at 8:30 in Café. This too serious a task to tell now while Crocodile waits for you."… Before I joined Katie at Café he said to her that he had made over one-seventh of Canary's seven parts

and from that the rest would proceed automatically. He was speaking only physically, he has forbidden that I tell about the other work. He began to explain the new task. I was listening with everything in me.

Then he stopped and began to talk about me. He said, "The way you receive first instruction is with very bad expression. People who are watching us would think I am telling you something quite else. There are spies for me everywhere. You must always keep your inner life for you alone and away from the world. This is a serious matter for you. There is no correspondence between your exterior and your interior. Lucky for you I can read your interior or I would not be able to judge you. Often you have not corresponding expression of your inner life. World can always not judge you correctly. Sometimes even when good effort at understanding make, you have quite idiotic expression. But I see because I have knowledge of these things. You must always watch yourself, always remember yourself. Then he said, "You bad case lop-sided. Always you have been for mind and nothing you find for understanding, because that quite another thing and for that must have teacher but not in your idiot American sense." I was fearing he would not give me the task. He sat in silence while I controlled everything. Then he gave it to me. You are right, it is almost too difficult. Three hours a day I must do it at first and in solitude. Later I can do it, "in the world." Afterward he will give me others "for your future" and remember yourself before the world. They must nothing see. I have been trying. First effect is a helpless sense of sleep that comes down on me like a cloud. What can that mean? I'll ask him tomorrow. Anything more I cannot tell you. Except that is so important a new functioning that I am overcome with responsibility.

I think I told you he forbids associations - emotional especially, all our music, all art, in fact everything we love. Says makes more psychopathic and that the force of those emotions must be used to obtain the new being - that second body. So when you say you want to develop you had better think it over - where would you be in life without being able without guilt to enjoy even arranging a room or table. That's why love is psychopathic but sex necessary. When you don't have sex, this force is so strong that it penetrates the emotions and almost makes you fall in love. Whereas you wouldn't dream if it you were living in a healthy and satisfied body. You see everything is so against one's emotional nature and ideas that it is terrifying to contemplate the change.

He said to Katie, "You not have brain. Brain very important to have in head, and not manure"… I must try not to think. He says I must catch up to my thinking. "Your mentation comes later when I have given you data for understanding." Then only you will understand everything. Those were his words but I cannot think he meant I would ever really understand everything…

Again had curse and asked him why so often. He said, "Quite natural. Medicine change all processes, that one too. Now adjustments necessary in organs." Certainly I feel very queer all over and through me.

The first exercise was nothing. I see now.

Forgot to tell you, he was pleased with me about the first… Oh what a hard life I have chosen… I asked him why I had no "correspondence". He said, "Heredity and bad education." He uses "no education" and "bad education" for being. No instruction in being.

January 4, 1936.

Went to the Café with Alice and Katie and for the first time since October 19 he walked out of Café with a salute and not speaking further. Of course he may have been absorbed in some problem of his own. I'm going tonight and see.

January 7, 1936.

Everything all right with Gurdjieff. It was only that I was with the others. He said last night he didn't want to see them - they aren't "serious." I sat with him half an hour while they waited in the other room. He talked all the time about my new task. I had been crying and he asked me why. I said, "Afraid to tell you, you will say again I am psychopathic." "No, no, tell me." "Today is anniversary of my mother's death and I always have remorse about her." "How long ago she die?" "14 years." "Not psychopathic. Indeed, very good thing. If all I know about you only that, I know you good place have. Mother very important in world - you get fire from mother. Good to have remorse. But not only once a year. You must think of her often."

Then he asked me about exercise - my new, too hard one. I told him I couldn't manage it very well. He waved his arms about and said, "You must struggle, struggle all the time. This exercise very important. Your whole future founded on it. It should be even more for you than for God. Even get angry, if necessary. Every-day-struggles little by little make data and from this data your future depends. You now must think of yourself as a baby you take care of and lead by hand. After you do this, if half hour at a time or full hour or more, all you can, then necessary only that you rest twice as long as you have done exercise. Be passive afterward." I asked if passive meant sit still doing nothing or could I do my work on the typewriter? He laughed and said, "Oh, yes. You passive then. You well asleep then."(Wish I could remember all.)

January 8, 1936.

Task is hellish and almost beyond me, though I succeeded in doing it for a continuous hour last night from 12 to 1.

January 12, 1936.

I had Mme. Dore's lunch and at 12:30 he telephoned for me and to get Alice and Katie too. So I had two lunches and we read three chapters, but not new. At lunch he said to tease me: "You always have a purpose and you always looking for something unusual or wonderful. I think after you go toilet you look in to see if there was by chance something wonderful." Gordon is very jealous of us being with Gurdjieff. What's that kind of jealousy about I wonder? I notice every time he calls to me ("Oh Kanari, Kanari."). She gets that funny color. She went to sleep today during the reading - so did Alice. Three chapters and long and neither understands a word, I'm sure, so why not snatch a nap?… Gordon changed from red to green and back today when he dictated to me a long explanation of the Swastika I had asked him for two days ago. She hardly said goodbye. I did my best to keep her friendly. I can't cope with such natures.

January 13, 1936.

Gurdjieff talked continually for an hour and a half - teaching search for the "soul". ("Suspicious" word, he said.)

January 16, 1936.

Have not done my three hours exercise today and I'll be at that until 3 am after Gurdjieff. I think it was last Sunday he began to talk to us like a teacher. He sat cross-legged on his big divan and we like a class before him. He said to Alice that she would not understand much of what he was going to say, because she had no brain, also doesn't understand his language, that he was giving to Katie the task of making Alice understand whatever was possible for her to take in. He said to Katie he knew she was practical and that since she was a crocodile (and swallows whole) that sometimes she understand something and other times nothing, but he wanted to see for himself what and how she would write down what he said in her own words. He said, "This will be your first examination" and then told me apart I was not to help her. He

spoke of his horse and cart simile and said he would make another to represent man.

A brief Summary: Man in his history has always believed he had a soul and sought for it. This is the aim of all religions. If in ordinary life I were asked if man has a soul, I would say, No, because in general, man has not. Before man can have a soul, he must have an "I". Only when he achieves an "I" can he develop a soul. There are four ways.

Let us compare ordinary man to a three-room apartment. The dining room will represent his organism, his moving center, the place he eats and attends to the needs of the body's maintenance and development. The drawing-room represents his feeling center and the bedroom is his mental center. But this apartment should have a bathroom which we will call the "I" room. In man's ordinary three-room apartment there is disorder. The roof leaks in the dining-room or there is no floor in the drawing room or the window panes are broken in the bedroom. No one has washed or painted or repaired. Perhaps only one room is furnished. Or the articles of furniture that belong in the bedroom are scattered about the dining room or are on the table in the drawing room. The building itself may be in the slums.

Man has tried three ways to find the soul. The first way is to live only in the dining room, develop the body, and give it great tasks and sufferings. This way is called, Fakirian, practiced by uneducated men. If by some great accident one of these Fakirs finds a way to a soul, it would be only one man out of a thousand and it would take him 50 years. Another way is via the drawing room, or Monkism. Here by the feeling center and psyche experiences, men have tried to find a soul via religion. Only one from a thousand MIGHT succeed but it would take him (if he did) only 25 years. Then he could pass to the bedroom. The best way of the three is the third room, the bedroom, or the mental center, via knowledge. Here, IF he succeeds, it would take him about 10 years. This is called Yogi-ism. But there is a FOURTH WAY. This is also a Yogi-ism. But it is different because this kind of Yogi has a secret by "heredity." (Initiate secrets). By this way with a teacher a man with the possibility can do the work in 6 months - then be his own teacher. I am the representative of the Fourth Way. And I have no concurrent (rival). For instance, the idiots of ordinary yogis who do not know these secrets, lie for three hours a day to learn how to use air. With my secret short-cuts they can do this in five minutes - in fact, like magic, drink the active elements they need from air out of a glass.

Man as he is has three or four personalities (or "I"s) instead of one "I". One day he is one person, the next day another, the next a third, depending on

which center is the day's center of gravity. Only after he has made his "I" can he then begin to develop his soul. Unless the soul is developed, he will die the merde he was born.

Then he gave the rivers again for an example.

All this, drawn out and repeated, took all these days. I can't remember all details but I am sure of the statements. Man must make a bathroom, the "I" room. But first he must repair his old apartment and sometimes it is cheaper to make a whole new one, throw out all the furniture, and furnish each room again with each new object in its proper place. Then the bathroom can be made and it will be a place to bring up a baby in (I suppose he meant the soul because he once called it that) with ordered rooms for the purpose of living in order.

"I am the architect for apartments- I examine the old apartment, the neighborhood, I tell what reparations must be made and give the estimate of the work".

He has talked his teaching for hours - Gordon says it's incredible - never in 12 years has he ever spoken directly to anyone. He told me I must stop automatic personality gestures - a certain sigh I give - I didn't even know I did it. Well, here I start the "stripping" process. Soon I'll be like the third Magot in the café - a silent motionless object full of knowledge. He said (to all) when someone he guides works well he gives him a reward to push him on. Then he said something they didn't understand (but I did) about my hard exercise (soon to be easier) - called me in the dining room and gave me a large glass of Armagnac.

Automatic gestures. Twice when I have had tears in my eyes he said, "That process proceed automatically." But the last time he said afterward to me, apart, "No good when <u>not</u> cry sometimes. You stink-source (his name for Alice) not cry except for self."

Gordon brought a woman to lunch one day - a girl rather. Tall, spare, French, but lives in England and India, interested in yogis, vegetables, non-nicotine and non- alcohol. What he did to her at lunch! Mental curiosity center, priggish, moral, even glasses. He stepped on all her "tender corns" and told her she was stupid.

He said, "You not understand what I say you not even listen." She said, "I didn't hear the last part of what you said." He said "not even first part, no intelligent look in your face, even when man not understand he can have lively look for trying." He made her drink Armagnac and eat meat. Yes, he's drinking again but I'm glad because he talks much more.

2 a.m dinner and back. He asked for questions. Gordon asked for herself what to do. He said, you know enough to want 3rd room. So you must study. But you are idiot such that I not tell you before all these younger people." To Katie he said, "I already reply in what I have said before. Not good question. You have seven thick crocodile skins. But Kanari have one thin skin. So I think she ask me a philosophical question." I said, "No, practical. I just want to know HOW" He said, "that depend your check book." He and I were working together on Alice and this was a question for effect on her. Then he asked Alice what question she had and she said, "I come alone and ask tomorrow."

I wish I had a brain! Anyway he's promised me one.

"Every thinking man (and by man I mean also woman) MUST be occupied only by this interest - to develop a soul."

"As important to compose a dish in its correctly-blended elements as a piece of music or colors in painting; Harmony in scale. Must have much knowledge to be good work. Culinary doctor."

January 17, 1936.

Just back from lunch with him. He said at table, "There are three kinds of onanism. Now you, Meet Gordon, if you were sick from too much of this, a doctor who knew you would look at you and say which kind it was before he could cure you. The Greeks called them Onanism, Platoism and Socratism." You see of course titillation in emotional or mental center is the same thing as the physical kind. I was thinking while he talked how you will never go to him to be cured, for all your rewards are this activity in the emotional and mental center. And Georgette's. Mine is now becoming only mental center titillation. I have practically arrived at controlling associations that produce this activity in emotional center. Really. I catch myself and stop. Of course this is easier now because I am with him so much. I don't mean I've stopped, but I can make stops… I may go away with him in a month or two to Germany and Switzerland. Don't know for how long. He will have house, he says. Alice and Katie also going. I know no details yet except these I can write.

January 20, 1936.

"Man lost his tail because of titillation in three centers." "Kiss till the last breath" (I suppose, don't do anything by halves.) and the other day in Café, some remarks about the ways, different ways woman's sex glands work that

meant something about them. I didn't understand and couldn't quite ask. He used such words that even I, hardened as I am, couldn't go into it.

He has planned a group to work with - Alice, Katie, me, Mees Gordon (because he owes her something) and maybe another person - a man I think. He told Katie that Alice would have to give up a lot of money - because she is such a difficult subject. He even spoke of twenty thousand dollars. I suppose she'll never do it. Mees Gordon is now starting to be a general overseer and rebuker and shusher. Alice answered her very well once today. He never makes us feel unnatural, but she does - sits minding every one's business but her own and watching, watching. Professional squelcher.

January 22, 1936.

No, I don't go toward Gurdjieff with active pleasure. It's the dentist all over again. There just is literally nothing else to do - but decay in life or die. Once you believe what he says, what alternative have you? Can't think of one. If you say you believe and don't do it, you're a liar and a criminal to "God." Of course people say they believe but mean they would like to, if they have time one day they will get around to thinking about it and in the meantime the rewards are titillation. I know because I did this emotionally and mentally with the G. ideas for seven years and it was marvelous and nothing like the dentist chair I am now in and see I must stay in.

You know the kind of idiot I am - compassionate is one of worst kinds in subjective sense, but good in objective sense. Harmful now but later on will be a good thing in me, he says. "You very dirty but one good thing have." I find more dirt every day. I do not like myself very much.

January 23, 1936.

The talk from Gurdjieff today was how to achieve one "I" that does not change from day to day. He gave us all a first beginning exercise (emanations) to do from 1 to 5 hours a day, as we can. And I have the other one too (air). I think at some moments I'll crack - then I think of what a miracle is happening on this planet and I go on.

No life is anything but empty to void - except the life of objective aim. Naturally you and Georgette and Jane are sources - you could be nothing else in the world and in fact, in truth, I have known no others.

He took a large tube of blood from me yesterday (arm artery) for detailed examination.

January 24, 1936.

Jane said, “You can’t acquire power without requiring it.”

Gurdjieff said yesterday, “I am a colleague of life.”

I wish I could stop everything and THINK for an hour. I feel somedays that I’ll never have an hour of my own again - without my conscience working at me to do an exercise instead.

January 26, 1936.

As for my poems, I never want to hear of them again. It’s that side of me he has to “make clean”. He says I must now pay for that kind of titillation I have indulged in. It seems it’s very bad chez moi. (But I’m glad it was bad enough to make me find him).

Only 2 things not spoiled by age - Armagnac and carpets

Today we had electricity chapter and he explained some of the words and gave us to understand that what we now have to do is to receive actively into our three centers just this electricity. I guessed he meant begin to receive impressions actively, but I’m not sure yet.

Yesterday noon he asked what each had experienced. Alice said “confusion” he said, “you mean shame? Real meaning of word is shame. You find out with shame you are not like what you thought you were like?” “Yes”. “Very good, that tells me much about your new beginning. Already you have make 25 percent advance. You know about new birth, the resurrection religions speak about? You must first die to be born and now you begin that.” Katie said she had found out things about herself in the exercise that she had known before and she thought it was because she was deprived of cigarettes. He said, “Then you already know that a million dollars not buy what you find out from not having just one cigarette. You must now put the wish for cigarettes into your wish for being. And this useful for all of you. Say four times daily, “I wish the result of this suffering to be my own for being.” To me he said, “Your result bad, very bad. That can be psychopathic and even must measure take. I can tell tomorrow when I get analysis of blood what element necessary. If some years from now, you have result such you tell me. That means you already have power to make such heat you can cure wound in few hours. But

now you could know nothing. It must be always your imagination." (But he said something to me about this in private).

Must stop. Worn out. I'm glad I haven't time to think about what is happening to me. I don't dare, I'd be too frightened. And Jane used to say you gave up nothing - nothing was taken away from you…

January 27, 1936.

It seems we all have livers - only mine is not physical but "psychopathic and mental" he said. (A bilious _ _ _.) Physically Katie the most liverish, then Alice. More details to come. We read book afterward till 4. He said that from now one half our waking hours will be spent on his exercise. I think perhaps I'll run away - I'm giving out.

I thought in the night, can this be really I who used to write poetry, who had a great love, who lived and cried and died in this funny room? It was a strange and body-less experiencing - a suspension in time. Then I went on with the exercises. Oh these exercises of intentional suffering - would you ever do them - the BOREDOM of sustaining ONE state, ONE activity, ONE fixation, over and over by the hour. Can you IMAGINE the boredom? Try.

Section 4

Trips to America

March 1939

Notes by Solita Solano

Notes of the trip to America – March - May, 1939.

We sail alone on the S.S.Paris.

He confesses on the train that he has spent all the dollars I had collected for his tipping on the ship and now has nothing. Takes out watch and studies it

G: On boat time will change each day. Already I prepare for this.

Kanari: PREPARE?

G: Of course. Necessary think of functions. They change if hour change when take lunch or dinner, even five o'clock tea. Not good if automatically this changes, so I prepare consciously the rhythm for functioning. Now I not remember such long tunnel, already long time we are underground.

K: I have special illness about being underground.

G: Yes, air is different. But you must not have illness. For such unsatisfaction, you will later have satisfaction. When air change again, such satisfaction body has! Necessary make this changing with satisfaction for body. Always be just to body.

Dinner first night on the Paris and he is already passing bonbons.

G: Truth, my tapeworm not satisfied.

K: No, for seven days he must do penance.

G: what is this word?

K: Is - church word - punishment for sins.

G: Not correspondent in this case. Church business is for psyche thing. Moreover, is all imagination, such manipulation. I speak only of real things - and of the heaviness my tapeworm must carry. (In the night the purser tried to change G's stateroom and he told him if he didn't go away from his door he

would break all his teeth.) After I told him with loud voice, they let me sleep in peace.

Second day:

We sit in deck chairs from 11 to 12. He sees woman pass, wearing trousers. G: She not can wear. There is old Russian word for such specific fat. All meaning in this one word. Old countries use few words but those make pictures for compact understanding. Ass is projector for understanding all other parts of a person. Always look in root to see what is, how is, all other parts. Ass is root. Also, of course, navel. Any navel I can look and tell what person is like.

Third day:

He spends it composing a cable (wireless) which we finish at 8 P.M. At the concert afterwards he gives Tchaikowsky a compliment: "Truth, he write such beautiful things, pity these men spoil."

Fourth day.

Sitting on deck. A thin woman passes. "She suffers to be thin because is fashion. This is the only suffering she can do. And just this kind suffering spoil her objectively. The only will she have is for this kind of suffering. Such kind of woman will suffer and cry to pull out hairs from over eye but if from leg must take, she will manipulate for one week, even ask for anesthesia. Sees very fat man. "Ach, his valise is bigger than mine. Such man sits at table all day and all night he sits on water closet. Next morning he forgets his night's suffering, only thinks to eat again. Makes program such as astonishes even head waiter." He says of a woman at the next table, "She is combination herring and leech." After dinner he sees me talking to the Ogden Nashes and later sends me the length of the salon with bonbons for them and their guests. Of course they want me to explain him to them. All very embarrassing! We play the horse races every night. He always bets on number 3 and so do I and often we win.

Fifth day.

He remarks, "Time slowly pass." I tell him how extraordinary are the three Russian-Greek anatomical books he has lent me for my work at the

Hopital St. Louis. “Just from those books,” he says, “I studied for my degree. Old German printings and some diagrams, very rare. But of course I found later much better in one Chinese monastery. Such for detail as you could never see even in dream. Only they were hard to learn to read because they not show negative picture, as all other books, but in this case, positive. Must study positive while holding always picture in mind of negative. Not one of your western scientists can even know there is such thing. This book also show at same time function. Also this not one of your idiot doctors can understand.

K: I know, even when I ask them such questions - after you told me about this thing - they do not understand what it is I wish to know.

G: Of course not must ask doctor. Even they will think you quite idiotic for asking. When scientists wish know rays of sun and study rainbow (prism) they not even know they only study negative aspect of ray - as from distorted image in mirror where left is right and right left. What can they expect to know from that? Now continue such studies and remember - photograph everything on your mind.

Sixth day.

We have piqûres every day before lunch. This day he dropped new syringe and broke it. I had to go to the chief doctor and make up a story to get a new syringe. Fog and icebergs.

K: I organically hate that foghorn.

G: Yet without could be unhappy situation. You MUST like instinctively because is good thing. But you have wrong instincts and impulse for disliking because you not have education. Everything mixed in you of feeling and thinking. Of course everyone hates such noise – you are not the only one.

(At dinner)

G: What is what saw with?

K: You mean saw for wood?

G: NO. I was going to tell one thing but with you I must always spend time looking for word. (Silence) What man do in field?

K: Sows?

G: With what? (Makes cutting motion)

G: Oh - scythe - for cutting.

G: Yes. Well, I wish tell that those two men there who invite those two women dinner eat last night, now no more sit together. So I tell I think scythe meet stone.

(At the concert he hears music of Debussy for the first time.)

G: For such music I can say is like shadow of sex organ seeking shadow another such opposite organ. This is not simple onanism like most musicians, because everything is involved - mind, feelings, all psyche.

K: Yet French consider Debussy a solid musician, he is their modern genius.

G: Yes, not everyone can make such. Necessary much manipulation and compromise.

End of notes by Solita Solano

Notes by Kathryn Hulme

Seventh Day [Sometime in March 1939]

Sardine, Theen one, and Krok await the 11 p.m. landing of the Paris. We wonder who else on pier belongs to him. Then see Lillian and Donald Whitcomb, Carol R, and Rita Romilly. Also Mr. Wolfe. But the Rope doesn't mix. We all pick different gangways for the expected landing. I see first. This is what I see. In the practically solid surge down the gangway – Kanari chic as Paris being pushed ahead and looking back. Four layers of people behind her is G - a too-small beret perched on his bald head, with the leather band out –and the little yellow silk bow (on the band - for tightening, ordinarily) sitting on his baldness. Somehow we join. G looking like a happy baby in that beret (which Kanari tried to separate from him during all the voyage because people laughed) sees his Knachschmitt and names each one.

G has 7 pieces of luggage. I take charge with Donald. Meanwhile Donald's wife Lillian, and Rita Romilly, are commissioned to find hotel. Romilly tells me he can't go back to any where he was before. (Carpet & furniture disasters.) So they choose the Wellington, 7th Ave. & 55th. Telephone for a suite. Meanwhile G's 7 pieces of luggage are together & the custom man comes. I unlock pieces. A suitcase filled with eyelashes is the only declared material. G, passing out bon bons, is treated gently - instead of $100 duty, they settle for one third, which he pays. He goes off to the hotel, telling all to meet afterwards, in Childs.

We help Kanari get through, put all luggage in car, and go directly to Childs. After midnight. About 14 are with him at table. All who were at pier, plus Muriel Draper and an escort. Everyone orders - everything from fried eggs to scotch & soda. The bill comes to $6.50 - which Kanari & I pay.

Wellington Hotel.

He has a bedroom, bathroom & living room - a very correspondent place for him. Shelves around for the cooking things which shortly are to collect.

There are several days of meeting at Childs. But the restaurant annoys him.They are not used to a half dozen chairs being pulled around one table which becomes strewn with lichee nut shells and loucoum. Finally G says categorically he will go no more in café but will receive in his hotel - 12 to 2 and 6 to 8 daily. Every day some of us are there. But seldom any of others, through Carol Robinson had commissioned Kanari to ask him if he was going to "begin anything". The old crowd doesn't seem to know anything about going and sitting. They wait to be invited. Meanwhile, we go and sit.

He starts out with a Sterno. Making his own coffee. Thin One brings him a big electric grill. Next day some gallon cooking pots appear. Forks and knives. Watermelons in the bedroom, cheese on the fire escape, bread in the desk and pickles in the book-case.

We eat on paper plates from Woolworth.

Alice went up alone Friday (his day before his bath) and rolled 200 meat balls for his Saturday-night bath party. He steamed over a gallon of wheat kernels - and threw 2 pounds of butter in the pot. When I saw that I said, "Just now I think Miss Gordon feel something, even across the ocean" He laughed and said, "Not ONLY Miss Gordon, but you all, I think".

Notes by Solita Solano

Sunday March 12th, 1939 at Wellington.

We have a terrific lunch so that even he says, "Now I am so full that even if God put something before me, would smell like gasoline."

Alice is candidate for idiot.

From a sequence everyone of us has forgotten he is talking about honey. "From shit to honey", he says "Man can transformate shit to honey, with knowledge".

Discussing the crises in USA, which he has constated through the lean pocketbooks of people, we tell how taxes take all, even tax what you work to get. He says. “Now for this there is one formulation very correspondent; they wish to take three skins from one donkey.”

G has Armagnac trouble. His chateau de Larresingle brand is no longer imported. We look everywhere. Meanwhile we drink whiskey. Then from whiskey to his own home-brew - triple-distilled alcohol (from his perfume industry) shaken up with lichee nuts and small pieces of toasted lemon-skin. This is a frightful drink, so strong it eats varnish off table.

Alice and I bring him the underwear we brought across for him 2 yrs. ago. He had forgotten about that and is pleased. He unpacks it and comes out from the bedroom says,”Look”, with a pink embroidered nightgown held up against his front. Each one he brings out this way. He tells for whom is each piece. Alice says too bad, she could have ironed them. Not have returned them to him so mussed. He says, “No - better like this.” I forget how he explained that ironing would make a different thing of each piece - remove all value - all creases and folds of a long voyage. “Quite another aspect it gives.”

As he arranges the nightgowns and embroidered pillows, he says, “Now already I more solidness have for hotel.” “Moreover, with nothing, man cannot borrow. But when he merchandise have, then can he take.”

One lesson for me I tell – revealing crocodile mentation. In Childs he commissions me to find needle for his German syringe – he is badly in need of piqûres. I run the length of 57th street to a Liggetts - they have no such needle - only ordinary kind. They tell me about adapters - which fit any needle to any syringe; only must be ordered in advance. I run back to café, empty–handed. He waits with Kanari, counting minutes. I tell about adapter. Then he says, ”But for now. You not bring even ordinary kind? ”So I beg him to wait – just 3 minutes more, I will get ordinary kind. As I go out, (Kanari later reported) he says, “Truth is crocodile mentation. All or nothing.” I meanwhile taxi to another drugstore, get hypo needles - short and fine, also the other kind they carry - very long. One of each to be safe. First I give him the short fine needles which he wanted. Then I bring out the long ones. “I bring all they have, Mr. G, not knowing exactly which you prefer.” I know something has been said by the way he smiles at Kanari. He fingers the know something has been said by the way he smiles at Kanari. He fingers the long needle. “With this you can make injection in brain, through navel.”

In hotel meanwhile, we develop a technique for garbage disposal. After dinner, we empty the wastebaskets into boxes and bags, wrap neatly and tie, and each one carries out a package of garbage. The first night we did it without

asking him, feeling only that the hotel people must not see those bones and rinds. When he saw the package going out door, he asked - and we tell we take away. “We will place in the middle of Times Square, Mr G.” “Of course,” he says,” Most important place, put in.”

Sometimes we look at our Rope going down in elevator, each with bag of garbage folded to look like a gift. Sometimes we can put it in the refuse bin on the corner of 55th & 7th - but when doorman is looking, we walk proudly to the car with our bundles. Once we had to drive 4 blocks before finding a refuse bin along the curb, and by that time the fumes in the car were unbreathable.

Now, lately, the situation seems not so acoute. G told Alice that the hotel housekeeper took him out to a movie. So now he has a relation with the hotel staff. We often wonder though what people in hotel across the street must think when they look down on Mr.G’s fire escape. Crocks, jars, pots and bundles, all out to cool - and four tins of caviar gathering soot. He has never opened any of this for us.

He finds his greens here – tarragon, mint, etc. Also, from time to time the Armenian friend delivers a sack of cheese.Also, in one bureau drawer he keeps a great roll of that unleavened Turkish bread – Lavash. It doesn’t look unlike flannel underwear rolled up in the corner. He holds the roll against his chest and tears off pieces, piling them in the middle of the table for us to eat. He has already at least once produced a gallon of his chicken and apricot soup. . . and his salads taste just like Paris’s. He keeps the salads in glass jars under the window in his bedroom next to the watermelons. All the Woolworth cutlery is in bottom drawer of bureau. Plates are all paper – except soup dishes. We never say specifically that we are coming, but always when we go indoors we see the four (or 5 if Sardine comes) places already laid, and his welcome to us is generally a wave of a ladle.

Diet Note: We sat down to one of his wonderful grape-leaf spiced soups with meatballs. He rolled cheese and greens into lavash and ate this first, whereas Alice began with the hot soup.

“Not begin with hot thing – always first make foundation with cold thing. Then hot come down and mix with cold, help transformate, also, with foundation of cold - hot thing not irritate stomach.”

Once Kanari and I saw a bathroom scene. These were the Sterno days, before the electric grill. I made him use Sterno on the tiled bathroom floor - too dangerous for table. He was making coffee on the Sterno. The pot wouldn’t boil. He hovered - first sitting on the toilet-seat, watching the small pot intently. The strain of getting that coffee to boil was too much for us. We waited in

other room. Then I tiptoed back to look in bathroom. He was on hands and knees on bathroom floor, blowing into the Sterno stove. A Sterno set-up is about 6 inches high so you have to lean low to blow. His rear pushed aginst the basin, his head against the toilet seat and he seemed to be shouldering the bath-tub nearer the wall. An elephant kneeling. I whispered "Kanari, come look."

Once he counted heads before eating - Thin One, Kanari, Sardine and Krok - but there were 5 places at table. He counted again. Four people - five places. Then he laughed - "Me, I forgot." That reminded him of a story - a man had six donkeys to drive to a marketplace - carefully he herded his donkeys and counted. Only five donkeys he could see. Very worried, he looked every place. Only five donkeys could he count. Finally a man came along and the donkey driver told him his predicament. "But you're sitting on the sixth donkey", said the owner.

The meat-ball soup (for which Alice had rolled the balls). We sit and he tells Kanari she owes this soup to Labors of Thin one. "Then I am grateful to Thin One," said Kanari. G - "Grateful – what is this word you use in this sense. Not you have right be grateful. Only she have right be grateful. Ach . . . your American mentation."

One Sunday – Alice and I drove him down to Atlantic Highlands to the Whitcombs - to bring back a trunk of books. The Whitcombs had prepared a roast lamb - but he refused to remain for lunch. They had everything prepared - even boiled eggs for his salad. Only coffee would he take but then Donald showed him on the roast his special part - the tail. So G took knife, cut off tail piece, also several chops, and brought back to N.Y. - where the Rope ate with gusto at the dinner in his rooms. (Alice kept the lamb hot in the back seat under blankets, and then continued in his room, keeping it warm on the radiator.)

In a day or two, he says he is going to Phoenix, Arizona. He has had telegram from the Frank Loyd Wrights.

(I have to go to Grosse Pointe to my family for fortnight.)

Notes by Kathryn Hulme

Wellington Hotel

G: If I could compose such exhibit of which you speak (Rabbit and Camel harnessed together in world's Fair) then this exhibit would be known for foremostness.

Leighton: You mean uniqueness.

Kroc: No, foremostness is exact for meaning.

G: Then this you remember for Kanari - make report. She collect my new word.

(Dr. Sapesko goes on to explain why "unique" could not take place of word G. gave. G. quiets him in Russian. Donald thereupon tries to calm the doctor still more and Sapeshko resents this, saying to Donald that only G. can speak so to him.)

Dr. S. Not you can speak so to me, you are small man. But he - he can say anything to me and I can take. You know why? Because I love him.

G: (Turns to Donald with a serious, gentle look and speaks in quite different tone) Truth, Donald, one fault you have. Though you are known as kind man, good nature, and though everyone know you not wish give offense, you do this unconsciously sometimes. Is fault that spoils all life for you. You have not considerateness for state of surroundings. Necessary always know what is around you – the state of man who is around you. With cow, you can shit on face of, and he not take offense. He lick, smile, shake head; not understand, not offense take. But man around you is already more high. He have states. You must know what is state of every man around you in room. Man, of course, is most of the time asleep, but this makes even more important that you be sensitive. Because when he is awake, even if only for one moment, he is already in state – and for this one moment is delicate, sensitive. Perhaps is only moment in his life when he can be enlightened. So you must consciously try to understand, be sensitive for him. I know what is state of each man around me, because I am educated man, I have knowledge. You must try always to have considerateness for state of surroundings – if you wish be objective bon ton. Never can you offend one thing on earth. Even if you offend one worm, one day he you will repay.

G: Sapeshko – him I love. You know why? Because never me he need with egoism. All of you – many men – wish to give me your soul. But for something. Only one or two on earth love me without egoism. And Mullah Nassr Eddin, him I love. Every man must on earth for one thing feel holy – or else (he makes a gesture across his throat, for hanging). Never I put him in galosh. I could put - only not wish.

April 14th, 1939.

I go dinner 9:30. He is lying on bed. I tell how was. Then we eat. "One soup never before seen in America." Near finish he says, "My tapeworm call

Kara-ool"- then long discussion to find meaning in English. He tells how in old villages man in black cape come down from hills and all villagers, when see, cry out, "Kara-ool!! Kara-ool means black wool. This, he implies, means all's well - I tell about Town Crier and he says, "Correspond".

(Two days later, at appropriate time in the after-dinner talk, I say Kara-ool. He is pleased I remember, only this time not told right for meaning I wish convey. Kara-ool can also mean "Help Help". He says it for me – "Kara – o-o-ool" long rising cry on the o-o-o-l. This way it "has accent for local morality, psychopathic thing is, local morality. Must learn what is local morality, then only can say so they will understand . . . (that the meaning Help Help is implied.)

He says, "Tonight, I drink like bourjui. You know what is?" I do not reply for several moments. Then he continues: "Bourjui seven aspect have: one, he have wishing eat, and will eat, even if grass on earth burn. So tonight, I wish drink - like bourjui."

We speak of Theen. "You wait . . . you will see the mechanism . . (of remorse I think he means.) We take coffee in bedroom only he not drink. He ask I sit on bed and tell one story – "with tzimuss" He says tzimuss so it sounds like quintessance. I say so. He says, Not tzimuss - tzimess - nearly same sound have, only quite another meaning. Tzimess mean sperm." I tell him my ear uneducated for sounds. He says, "nearly same sound have."

He tells if I would lie beside, would bring fulfilling. I tell I not have education for understanding such. He says, "Not mama-papa, you not understand. Man when tired sometimes can fulfill, having passive beside him. Then can he be passive. This very complicate thing I tell. Woman all is same. Man can be woman. Just this fulfilling when rest together - without m - p business. You not understand. I far go." He leads, I not remember how, so. I speak of cow. "I Swiss cow perhaps," I say. G – "No, Normandy cow. You not hear about Normandy cow? All world, in all language, know is normal cow. Not have big here (where udder would be) or here (where other organs would be, but all same - through average have - still give big. In Tibet, One N. cow give one litre daily. This one litre what one Normandy cow give equal 5 litres what ordinary cow give daily. You have such for me. You are here - friend. I not feel I must be so-so (gestures politeness) - or nervous. Even I can eye keep shut. No one come in door to kill. You sit. You are near." I felt importance about everything he said, only could not understand. Then I put cigarettes near, and prepared for going.

I accept his invitation to come dinner tomorrow night - at 11p.m - when all came from bath. "You prepare appetite - even for beating."

April 15th, 1939 - 11 P.M.

All the men who went with him to bath are around table - Donald, Leighton, Stanley Speigelburg, Benson. No women yet – I arrive 2 minutes to 11. He twits me. "Eleven exact, I tell. Then will women come. "At 11 exact, Rita Romilly and Lillian come in. Special sitting for women, men give up table seats & occupy lounge. A new atmosphere for me different from what I have known in G gatherings. At first I think I not like. The men titillate about politics while G is talking. Once he interrupts his talk, listens to them on the lounge, then says to us, "Hear . . . how they beat each other!"

He asks Lillian how she like soup. She makes answer couched in phrases of politesse. Her husband, Donald, says to G - "Look, she diplomat." G looks at her a moment, then says, "She is ass-ing." So unexpected was this new word, and so exact, I laugh loud and congratulate. "Good, eh?" he says, "This you must remember tell Kanari. Ass-ing." Everyone comes in now for a discussion of ass-ing - much laughter. From a djoppa root, says G .

Later he is speaking of tapeworm. "Two kind is. One - eat all but no satisfaction have. Other, eat all - but have satisfaction. Today, all day, first kind I have in my house." (The people who came).

April 16th, 1939 - Sunday lunch.

Only Leighton is there. Leighton can tell good stories in G's way - making every word understood. He tells G how read in newspaper about one chicken that laid one egg, then 10 minutes later, another egg, another ten minutes - another egg - so on until 12 eggs were laid, but toward end eggs became smaller and shells soft. Then, when last small soft-shelled egg was laid, chicken rolls over on back and dies.

G – "If clever man there was, then could save chicken. Only one thing do. Very simple thing."

I dare - "Can you tell, Mr. G, if so simple?"

He waits a moment then says, "Camphor give. Small pieces of food." He explains how chicken comes to have so many eggs. "One small part inside make stop. Nothing can pass. Then all Dirtiness go - or in blood, or in organ, even in this place where make egg. Then suddenly break through. This why so many eggs at once. "Could continue, many more than twelve."

Leighton tells how he saw one extraordinary photograph in a German book shop. Was book on Malaya. A Malay sits so - knees at right angles to each

other, feet on ground, arms out holding one small monkey which he has killed. He is removing intestines of monkey. Pulling gut toward him. And position of monkey is exact same as position of man, only reverse. Legs fallen open at right angles to each other, arms out – exact like man.

G - "German. They wish prove something."

I wish hear again so I say – "For proving".

G - "Yes, of course. Even they cry documental."

We speak of matches. G recalls time when only Swedish matches was, and after many light in room, must leave room. Sulphur smells so strong. Leighton tells how grandmother made light from tinder. G says he remembers farther back . . . when not even this was known. "I very old man." He tells or people he has known in life. Galvani, in Italy. "When I was boy, he invent electricity. Was holiday in school. Such excitement was for electricity. And from this I begin my doctor business. With leg of frog."

Leighton remarks later (I forget the association) that he is like chameleon. I think he was describing how G's food changes him instantly. He explains to G what chameleon is, but G knows. G - "Better. You are like one paper. Intelligent paper is." I guess he speaks of litmus paper, turns red for acid, blue for alkalie. G says yes, only not called it such name. "Even I know man what invent such - German was. "He sounds a name like "Linmuss", inventor of litmus paper. "Never he thought, when he this invent, would be used as is today. For photography - such dirty thing."

Leighton mentions that "Linmuss" lived nearly century ago. "But I known," says G. "Even I know this Morse. Telegraph inventor. Only he not invent. He take code from system which existed long, long before. Signal by light. (Heliograph I say.) Yes, man in past have such system for speaking - with light."

We all laugh so hard we forget to go home. At 1:30 G says with a woeful expression, "I sorry that your host bores you". This is his new way of saying go-go to guests!

Wednesday night, April 25, 1939 [Actually a Tuesday]

Tonight I wished see him but didn't know how, so wandered past café - not there. Wandered in hotel - not there. Wandered out of door of hotel, and there was. Standing on doormat of hotel saying "Oi oi, so hot". Handsome, hat on back of head. Overcoat over arm. I titillate about possible errands I might

do, has he any? He titillates about rendezvous he has at 9. We titillate. Weather. (He knows how much I wish be with him this night.) Then I prepare to go by placing one foot forward. So he says, "Telephone 9 o'clock."

I wander 2 hours around Times Square happy because I am invited to telephone him. Not one other soul in this crowd has that privilege. At 9 I telephone. "If you wish come supper - you can come?" "In 4 minutes I be there". I run all the way.

Only Dr. Sapeshke is there with him. Magnificent sturgeon. I must drink one whole goblet of Armagnac, for harmony. I do. The Dr. blinks. Later, we come to Square. And I say, "And to my health also."

Dr. - "May God bless you."

G - "What tell?"

We tell and he smiles on me and says, "May God shit on you".

"Already this big thing is, "I say.

G - "Of course. God cannot remember all who are on earth - two thousand millions. So, if accidentalement He shit - even one small piece of fall on you - is big thing."

Next I remember – I hear Doctor say, putting up his glass, "Da Pianni".

He receives it half full. So I say the same … and receive it full!

(*End Katie's notes)*

Notes by Solita Solano

April - May 1939.

Wellington:

G: Do you understand what I said?

S: I'm trying to.

G: Not enough to try. Must understand without trying. He who always try and never do is onanist. Must at once Do in life, if wish normal man be - in all things. There is no "nearly" in real understanding; is or is not.

(The rest of my notes are in France - will find if possible and copy.)

May 1939

Notes by Kathryn Hulme

May 7, 1939. *[More complete notes next for same date]*

(Leighton brings Theos Bernard, a nice friendly little boy with lines in his face. Rita, Benson, Muriel Draper, Spiegelberg, Crocodile, all at Wellington after the Saturday night bath.)

M.D.: I pity Bernard. I bewail his face. Four hours ago I saw him come to the café, color in his face, light in his eyes, alive, gay and with a future. And now –

Bernard: (laughing) But I'm still alive.

G: But how you tell - such cheap life. Man must at all times mathematically hear, mathematically understand, mathematically answer. Only this is life. Always he must be with his I. Only then is he man without quotation mark. No matter what he have in surroundings – people, noise, alcohol - he must always mathematically understand; never lose self even when drunk. He can be drunk, but never his I be drunk.

Lunch. Krocodile and Leighton.

G: Krocodile, be sure write Kanari about my new word. (To L.) Kanari collect my new word.

Leighton: Then she is antiquaire - one who collects things.

G: Not is antiquaire. He collects only old thing. Kanari collect for future. Is antiquaire for future.

Leighton: She is a Boswell.

[An alternative version for the same date]

May 7, 1939 Another Saturday bath night.

I go to Ansonia with Draper and Rita, meeting them in café first, where at 7 all gather. Leighton brings Theos Bernard, as guest. Bernard without beard – tan gabardine suit, corn flower boutonniere, tip tilt nose, a nice friendly little boy with lines in his face. G tells all to come to dinner at 11.

Rita, Draper and I arrive exact 11. Seven men are already around table. G, Leighton, Bernard, Speigelburg, Benson (Rita's husband) and one other. They are at squirming. Food practically gone. Ladies eat melon and drink

canned fruit juices of which G now has a gross of tins, ranged on ledge above tub in his bathroom.

Bernard, like the other men, sits in suspenders.

Draper is magnificent. She "darlings" G and whole center of interest goes to her. After a while G remembers guest. He speaks in general of one person there who for him is very important.

Draper looks as if singled out.

G waves hand - "Not YOU. I know you. I know ALL you. Of HIM I speak. He for me is like new lemon. I wish squeeze."

Draper – "I get 2 slices, darling."

She and G bargain over the division, finally decide to go 50-50 on Bernard. Bernard laughs, as if jolly part, but watches.

Then Draper bewails Bernard's fat … tells how four hours ago she saw him come in café, with color in his face, light in his eyes, alive, gay, and with a future …. And now …. now.

Bernard laughs at her picture, then says, "But I'm still alive".

G - "But how you tell – such cheap life. Man must at all times mathematically hear, mathematically understand, mathematically answer. Only this life. Always he must be with is I. Only then is he man not in quotation marks. No matter what have in surroundings - people, noise, alcohol - always he must mathematically understand, mathematically answer. Never lose self, even when drunk. He can be drunk but never his I be drunk."

Leighton claps for G's speech.

G – (to Leighton) "You are djoppa, moreover … morse"

They wait for "morse" to be elucidated.

I say "Walrus". I formulate for them: Walrus is all djoppa with whiskers at one end". G enjoys that.

Rita reads American chapter. G laughs so hard he gets red in face. Leighton nudges Bernard at the "good" parts. They laugh a lot with G, while those of us who have heard this many times wish to cry, it grows more terrible with each reading. Meanwhile G leans forward on his paunch and watches Bernard's reactions. But he never gives any indication of what he sees, if anything. His attitude - benevolent.

At parting, in his bedroom, however, he says to Bernard:

"I will tell you one prayer you must say tonight. This most holy. Is initiate thing." Everyone hearing the word 'initiate' moves closer. Also Bernard, now standing squarely in front of G.

G then crosses arms across breast and looks up. First you make so." Then G puts his index finger in mouth, takes it out and with sweeping gesture brings it slowly around to his backside, but from other side. "And third time, you make so." He wets finger, bends, brings it down between his legs, towards backside. "This initiate prayer. This you do – and then you can sleep."

(End N. Y. notes by Katie)

December 1948

Notes by Solita Solano

December 17, 1948.

G arrived S.S. America with Mme. De Salesman, Lord Pentland, another Englishman and a Mr. Walton who was at Prieuré and who is now "tamada". All old group at ship or Hotel Wellington to greet him. First coffee and Armagnac at 11, then lunch at 2 for 25 or more. He told us the Englisjh (old Ouspensky group) had paid his debts in Paris, millions of francs; that he was to buy a large chateau for headquarters; that health is now even better than before accident. "All debt liquidated in France, I come to you pure like new-born baby."

Big suite at hotel prepared and stocked for him, his kind of food and drink. When Alice burst in, he said "What! You not afraid to come?" "No, Mr. G" "Why you not afraid?" "Well - because I have known you many years." Alfred had flown to N.Y. earlier and had already began to rehearse the new group of sixty at Carnegie hall; G - went there the first evening to supervise the exercises.

For the toasts: at Alice's announcement that she was now square idiot having been changed from a squirming, he said "Ha! was automatic change". At enlightened "tomada" asked, "anyone here?" G said, "No. Yet have been times when everyone at table was." Then he formulated second series "mesoteric" toasts and gave first two:

1. To health of all hopeless idiots, both subjectively and objectively; that is to say, to the health of all candidates for an honorable death and to the health of all candidates for perishing like dogs."

2. To the health of all candidates for all of kinds of idiots."

To Carol Robinson: "If you wish, advice I give you. Now must begin to eat for quality, not quantity. If not, you will soon resemble wife of merchant, each time see, more big is. And for your profession, think how will be if fingers four times bigger, like elephant. You know even elephant have five fingers."

To all at table: "If you wish help me, every hour you must say I AM; I, with feeling - am, with sensing".

Donald: "I need help, Mr. G. No use to struggle without help."

G - "You shall have help. I have brought help, all kinds – even physico-chemico".

S. “One request, Mr. G., new friend’s mother wish to see you, just look at you 5 minutes. May she come?”

G. – “Yes, mother is my weakness. I loved my mother very much. I invite come lunch.” Then he went out with Donald to shop for salad materials, Donald carrying a shopping bag.

Next day – He once said, “Scale is from merde to God.” Now about toasts, he said, “Unique idiot is highest (thing) and in stone or static thing is the lowest; between the two is our scale or measure. First time, one starts up the scale automatically proceeds as far as #16. Is easy, easy to go up. For going down is difficult because go down with consciousness. Second time go up, can go beyond 16 - even to Stink Idiot.”

S. “Is Stink Idiot same as Harmful?”

G. “No. Sometimes Stink Idiot can be made clean. But harmful never, in objective sense.

S.S (*Now Katie’s notes)*

G shows us all the 5 & 10c gifts he has bought for presents. Of one item he is especially proud. He has bought dozens. “Small thing is,” he says, “but for them in Paris is new and wonderful.” He illustrates how he will, with a bow, present this rare gift from America, how they will receive it, awestruck. He hands Leighton the gift. It is a ten cent folding bunion knife.

GURDJIEFF TO DONALD:

Now you have thousand "I's"; each weakness is an I that is master of you. To have your own I it is necessary for it to be born.

It has been conceived - now by feeding it, it will accumulate substance and one happy day take form. Then it can develop and be born.

This substance of "I" comes only from intentional suffering. When, for instance, you wish strongly for a cigarette and deny yourself you will suffer inwardly. Then say, "I wish to make this inward force my force." "I wish to receive this substance of my intentional suffering for my I." By this means, you can become an individual.

Now you have a name but it is empty. Then Mr. Whitcomb will be Mr. Whitcomb.

— —

When you intentionally endure suffering say, "I pray that this suffering may feed my "I" and that through it I may become a real individual."

"I pray that I may remember myself at all times and that by this means I may become a real individual."

— —

I sacrifice this Kundabuffer pleasure for my "I".

REALIZATION OF THE INEVITABILITY OF DEATH

It would be a blessing to all: to God, to the deceased and to you and me, and even to the whole of humanity, if there proceeded in you because of someone's death the process of realization about your own forthcoming death instead of the process of manifesting meaningless words.

Only full realization by man of the inevitability of his own death can destroy in him those factors for the manifestation of the different aspects of egoism which is the root of all evil in our reciprocal existence.

Only such a realization can again regenerate in people the data formerly already in them for the divine impulses of faith, love and hope.

LETTER TO MADAME X

Past joys are as useless to man in the present as the snows of last year which leave no trace by which one can remember what they were. Only the imprints of conscious labor and intentional suffering are real, and can be used in the future for obtaining good.